he was quite dead. Then be took up his bow and arrows, and came back; fo I turned to go away, and beckoned to him to follow me, making figns to him, that more might come after them.

Upon this he fignified to me, that he fould bury them with fand, that they might not be feen by the reft, if they followed; and fo I made figns again to him to do fo. He fell to work, and in an inftant he had feraped an hole in the fand with his hands, big enough to bury the firft in, and then dragged him into it, and covered him; and did fo alfo by the other. I believe he had buried them both in a quarter of an hour. Then calling him away, I casried him not to my caftle, but quite away to my cave, on the farther part of the ifland; fo I did not let my dream come to pafs in that part, viz. that he came into my grove for thelter.

Here I gave him bread, and a bunch of raifins to eat, and a draught of water, which I found he was indeed in great diftrefs for by his running; and having refrefhed him, I made figns for him to go lie down and fleep, pointing to a place where I hace laid a great parcel of rice ftraw, and a blanket upon it, which I ufed to fleep upon myfelf fometimes; fo the poor creature lay down, and went to fleep.
He was a comely, handfome fellow, perfectly well made, with Itraight long limbs, not too large, tall, and wellPhaped; and, as i reckon, about twentyfix years of age. He had a very good cuuntenance, not a fierce and furly afpect, but feemed to have fomething very manly in his face, and yet he had all the fweetnefs and foftnefs of an European in his countenance too, efpecially when he fmiled: his hair was long and black, not curled like wool; his forehead very high and large, and a great vivacity and fparkling fharpners in his eyes. The colour of his fkin was not quite black, but very tawny, and yet not of an ugly yellow, naufeuus tawny, as the Brazilians and Virginians, and other natives of America are, but of a bright kind of a dun olive colour, that had in it fomething very agreeable, though not very eafy to defcribè. His face was round and plump, his nore fmall, not flat like the Negroes; a very good mouth, thin lips, and his teeth fine, well-fet, and
white as ivory. After he had flum bered, rather than flept, about half an hour, he waked again, and comes out of the cave to me, for I had been milking my goats which I had in the inclofure juft by. When he efpied me, he came running to me, laying himfelf down again upon the ground, with all the poffible figns of an humble thankful difpofition, making many antick geftures to fhew it. At laft he lays his head flat upon the ground, clofe to my foot, and fets my other foot upon his head, as he had done before; and after this made all the figns to me of fubjection, fervitude, and fubmiffion imaginable, to let me know how much he would ferve me as long as he lived. I underftood him in many things, and let him know I was very well pleafed with him. In a little time I began to fpeak to him, and teach him to fpeak to me; and firf, I made him know his name fhould be Fridãy, which was the day I faved his life, and I called him fo for the memory of the time; I likewife taught him to fay ' Mafter,' and then let him know that was to be my name; I likewife taught him to fay Yes and No, and to know. the meaning of them; I gave him fome milk in an earthen pot, and let him fee me drink it before him, and fop my bread in it; and I gave him a cake of bread to do the like, which he quickly complied with, and made figns that it was very good for him.
I kept there with him all that night, but as foon as it was day, I beckoned him to come with me, and let him know I would give him fome cloaths, at which he feemed very glad, for he was ftark-naked. As we went by the place where he had buried the two men, he pointed exactly to the fpot, and fhewed me the marks that he had made to find them again, making figns to me that we fhould dig them up again, and eat them; at this I appeared very angry, expreffed my abhorrence of it, made as if I would vomit at the thoughts of it, and beckoned with my hand to him to come away, which he did immediately with great fubmiffion. I then led him up to the top of the hill, to fee if his enemies were gone, and pulling out my glafs, I looked, and faw plainly the place where they had been, but no appearance of them, or of their canoes; fo
that it was plain that they were gone, and had left their two comrades behind them, without any fearch after them.
But I was not content with this difcovery; but having now more courage, and confequently more curiofity, I took my man Friday with me, giving him the fword in his hand, with the bow and arrows at his back, which I found he could ufe very dexterouly, making him carry one gun for me, and I two for mylelf, and away we marched to the place where thefe creatures had been; for I had a mind now to get fome fuller intelligence of them. When I came to the place, my very blood ran chill in my veins, and my heart funk within me at the horror of the fpectacle. Indeed it was a dreadful fight, at leaft it was fo to me, though Friday made nothing of it. The place was covered with human bones, the ground dyed with the blood, grea pieces of flefh left here and there halfeaten, mangled, and forched; and, in fhort, all the tokens of the triumphant feaft they had been making there, after a victory over their enemies. I faw three ikulls, five hands, and the bones of three or four legs and feet, and abundance of other parts of the bodies; and Friday, by his figns, made me underitand, that they brought over four prifoners to fealt upon; that three of them were eaten up, and that he, pointing to himfelf, was the fourth; that there had been a great battle between them and their next king, whole fubjects, it feems, he had been one of; and that they had taken a great number of prifoners, all which were carried to feveral places by thofe that had taken them in the flight, in order to feaft upon them, as was done here by thefe wretches upon thofe they brought hither.

I caufed Friday to gather all the fkulls, bones, flefh, and whatever remained, and lay them together on an heap, and make a great fire upon it, and burn them all to afhes. I found Friday had fill an hankering fomach after fome of the flefh, and was ftill a canibal in his nature; but I difcovered fo much abhorrence at the very thoughts of it, and at the leaft appearance of it, that he durft not difcover it $;$ for I had, by fome means, let him
know, that I would kill him if he offered it.

When we had done this, we came back to our caftle, and there I fell to work for my man Friday; and firt of ail, I gave him a pair of linen drawers, which I had out of the poor gunner's cheit I mentioned, and which I found in the wreck; and which, with a little alteration, fitted him very well; then I made him a jerkin of goat's fkin, as well as my fkill would allow, and I was now grown a tolerable good taylor; and I gave him a cap, which I had made of an hare-1kin, very convenient, and fafhionable enough: and thus he was drefled, for the prefent, tolerably well, and mighty well was he pleafed to fee himfelf almolt as well cloathed as his maiter. It is true, he went aukwardly in thefe things at firit: waaring the drawers was very aukward to him; and the fleeves of the waiftcoar galled his fhoulders and the infide of his arms; but a little eafing them, where he complained they hurt him, and ufing himfelf to them, at length the took to them very well

The next day after I came home to my hutch with him, I began to confider where I frould lodge him; and that I might do well for him, and yet be perfectly eafy myfelf, I made a little tent for him in the vacant place between my two fortifications, in the infide of the laft, and in the outfide of the firft: and as there was a door or entrance there into my cave, I made a formal framed door-cale, and a door to it of boards, and fet it up in the paffage, a little within the entrance; and caufing the door to open on the infide, I barred it up in the night, taking in my ladders too; fo that Friday could no way come at me in the infide of my innermoft wall, without making fo much noife in getting over, that it muft needs awaken me; for my firft wall had now a compleat roof over it of long poles, covering all my tent, and leaning up to the fide of the hill, which was again laia crofs with fmall fticks inftead of laths, and then thatched over a great thicknefs with the rice-ftraw, which was ftrong like reeds; and at the hole or place which was left to gol in or out by the ladder, I had placed a kind of trap-door, which, if it had been attempted on the outlide,
would
would not have opened at all, but yet expeet a like duty from both. But would have fallen down, and made a great noife ; and as to weapons, I took them all in to my fide every night.
But I needed none of all this precaution; for never man had a more faithful, loving, fincere fervant, than Friday was to me; without paffions, fultennefs, or defigns; perfectly obliging and engaging; his very affections were tied to me, like thofe of a child to a father; and I dare fay, he would have facrificed his life for the faving mine, upon any occafion whatfoever. The many teftimonies he gave me of This, put it out of doubt; and foon convinced me, that I needed to ufe no precautions as to my fafety on his account
This frequently gave me occafion to obferve, and that with wonder, that, howevar it had pleafed God in his providence, and in the government of the works of his hands, to take from fo Sreat a part of the worle of his creatires, the beft ufes to which their fachalties ${ }^{3}$ and the powers of their fouls are adapted- yet that be has beffowed upon them the fame powers, the fame reafon, the fame 'affections, the fame fentiments of Eindrefs and obligation, the fame palions and refentments of wrongs, the fame fenfe of gratitude, fincerity, fidelity, and all the capacities of doing good, and receiving good, that he has given to us; and that when he pleafes to offer them odcafons of exerting thefe, they are as ready, nay, more ready to apply them to the right ufes for which they are be. frowed, than we are. And this made me tery melancholy fometimes, in ieflecting, as the feveral occafions prelented, how mean an ufe we make of all thefe, even though we have thefe powers enlightened by the great lamp of inftruction, the Spirit of God, and by the knowledge of his Word, added to our underftanding; and why it has pleafed God to hide the like faving knowledge from fo many millions of fouls, who, if I might judge by this poot favage, would make a much better ufe of it than we did?
From hence I fometimes was led too far to invade the fovereignty of Providence, and, as it were, arraign the juftice of fo arbitrary a difpofition of things, that frould hide that light
from come, and reveal it to others, and

I fhut it up, and checked my thoughts Fhut it up, and checked my thoughts
with this conclufion:- Firit, That we do not know by what light and law thefe مiould be condemned; but that, as God was neceffarily, and by the nature of his being, infinitely holy and juft, fo it could not be, but that if thefe creatures were all fentenced to abfence from himfelf, it was on account of finning againft that light, which, as the Scripture fays, ${ }^{6}$ was a ' daw to themfelves, and by fuch rules as their confciences would acknowledge to be juft, though the foundation was not difcovered to us. And, fecondly, That ftill, as we are all clay in the hand of the potter, no veffel could fay to him, "Why haft thous ' formed me thus?'
But to return to my new companion. I was greatly delighted with him, and made it my bufinefs to teach him every thing that was proper to make him ufeful, handy, and helpful but efpecially to make him fpeak, and underftand me when I fpake; and he was the aptelt fcholar that ever was $\frac{5}{5}$ and particularly was fo merry, fo confantly diligent, and fo pleafed when he could but underftand me, or make me underitand him, that it was very pleafant to me to talk to him; and now my life began to be fo eafy, that I began to fay to myfelf, that could $\frac{1}{2}$ But have been fafe from more favages; I cared not if I was mever to remove from the place while $I$ lived.

After I had been two or three days returned to my cafle, I thought, that in order to bring Friday off from his horrid way of feeding, and from the relifh of a canibal's fomach, I ought to let him tafte other flefh; fo I took him out with me one morning to the woods; I went, indeed, intending to kill a kid out of my own flock, and bring it home and drefs it: but, as I was going, I faw a the-goat lying down in the fhade, and two young kids fitting by her. I catched hold of Friday, "Hold,' faid I, 'ftand ftill;' and made figns to him not to fir. Im mediately I prefented my piece, fhot; and killed one of the kids. The poor creature, who had at a diftance, in deed, feen me kill the favage, his enemy, but did not know, or could imagine, how it was done, was fenfibly furprized, trembled and fhook,
sha lobkè formazed, that I thought and looke did not fee the kid I had fhot at, or perceive I had killed ir, but ripped up his waiftcoat to feel if lie was not wounded; and, as I found prefently, thought I was refolved to kill him; for he came and kneeled down to me , and embracing my knees, faid a great many things I did not underfand, but I could eafily fee that his meaning was to pray mie not to kill him.

I foon fotind a way to convince him that I would do him no harm; and taking him up by the hand, laughed at him, and pointing to the kid which I had killed, beckoned to him to run and fetch it, which he did; and while he was wondering and looking to fee how the creature was killed, I loaded my gun again, and by-and-by I faw a great fowl, like a hawk, fit upon'a tree within fhot; fo, to let Friday underftand a little what I would do, I called fim to me again, pointing at the fowl, which was indeed a parrot, though I thought it had been a hawk; I fay, pointing to the parrot, and to my gun, and to the ground under the parrot, to let him fee I would make him fall, I made him underftand that I would thoot and kill that bird; accordingly I fired, and bid him look, and immediately he faw the parrot fall. He food like one frighted again, notwith fanding all that I had faid to him and I found he was the more amazed, becaufe he did not fee me put any thing into the gun; but thought there mult be fome wonderful fund of death and deftruction in that thing, able to kill man, beaft, bird, or any thing near or far off; for the aftonifmment this created in him was fuch, as could not wear off for a long time; and I believe, if I would have let him, he watild have worflipped me and my gun : as for the gun itfelf, he would not fo much as touch it for feveral days after; but would Ipeak to it, arid talk to it, as if it had anfwered him, when he was by himfelf; which, as I afterwards learned of him, was to defire it not to kill him.

Well, after his aftonifhment was a little over at this, I pointed to him to run and fetch the bird I had fhot, which he did, but faid fome time; for the parrot; not being quite dead,
was fluttered a good way off from the place where fhe fell; however he found her, took her up and brought her to me; and, as I had perceived his ig norance about the gun before, I took this advantage to charge the gun again, and not let him fee me do it, that I might be ready for any other mark that might prefent; but nothing more offered at that time; fo I brought home the kid, and the fame evening I took the fkin off, and cut it out as well as I could, and having a pot for that purpofe, I boiled or ftewed fome of the flefh, and made fome very good bioth; after I had beguin to eat forme, I gave fome to my man, who feemed very glad of it, and liked it very wel! ; very giad of it, and hat which was ftrangelt to him but that which was ftrangel
was, to fee me eat falt with it. He made a fign to me, that the fait was not good to eat, and putting a little into his own mouth, he feemed to naufeate it, and would fpit and fputter at it, walhing his mouth with frefh water after it; on the other hand, I took fome meat in my mouth without falt, and I pretended to fpit and fputter for want of falt, as faft as he had done at the falt; but it would not do, he would never care for falt with meat, or in his broth; at leaft, not a great while, and then but a very little

Having thus fed him with boiled meat and broth, I was refolved to feaft him the next day with roafting a piece of the kid; this I did by hanging it before the fire in a ftring, as I had feen many people do in England, fetting two poles up, one on each fide the file, and one acrofs on the top, and tying the ftring to the crofs ftick, letting the meat turn continually. This Friday admired very much; but when he came to talte the flefh, he took fo many ways to tell me how well be liked it; that I could not but underftand him: and at laft he told me he would never eat man's flefh any more, which I was very glad to hear.

The next day I fet him to work to beating fome corn out, and fifting it in the manner I ufcd to do, as I ob, ferved before; and he foon unde.ftood how to do it as well as I, efpecially after he had feen what the meaning of it was, and that it was to make bread of; for after that I let him fee me make my bread, and bake it roo; and
in a little time Friday waslable to do all the work for me, as well as I could do it myfelf.
I began now tolconfider, that baving two mouths to feed inftead of one, I muft provide more ground for my harveft, and plant a larger quantity of corn than I ufed to do; fo I marked out a larger piece of land, and began the fence in the fame manner as before, in which Friday not only worked very willingly, and very hard, but did it very chearfully; and I told him what it was for, that it was for corn to make more bread, becaufe he was now with me, and that I might have enough for him and myfelf too. He appeared very fenfible of that part, and let me know, that he thought I had much more labour upon me on his account, than I had for myfelf, and that he would work the harder for me, if I would tell him what to do.
This was the pleafanteft year of all the life I led in this place: Friday began to talk pretty well, and undertrand the names of almoft every thing I had occafion to call for, and of every place I had to fend him to, and talk a great deal to me; fo that, in Chort, I began now to have fome ufe for my tongue again, which, indeed, I had very little occafion for before; that is to fay, about (peech. Befides the pleafure of talking to him, I had a fingular fatisfaction in the fellow himfelf; his fimple unfeigned honefty appeared to me more and more every day, and I began really to love the creature; and on his fide, I believe, he loved me more than it was poffible for him ever to love any thing before.
I had a mind once to try if he had any hankering inclination to his own country again; and having learned him Englifh fo well, that he could anfwer me almoft any queftions; I arked him, whether the nation that he belonged to never conquered in battle. At which he fmiled, and faid, 'Yes, yes, 6 we always fight the better!' that is, he meant, always get the better in fight; and fo we began the following difcourfe. You always fight the * better!' faid I: 's how come you to 6 be taken prifoner then, Friday ? Friday. My nation beat much for all that.
Master. How beat ! if your na4
tion beat them, how came you to be taken?

- Friday. They more than my nation in the place where me was; they take one, two, three, and me. My nation over-beat them in the yonder place, where me no was; there my nation take one, two, great thoufand.
Master. But why did not your fide recover you from the hands of your enemies then?
Friday. Theyrun one, two, three, and me, and make go in the canoe; my nation have no canoe that time.
Master. Well, Friday; and what does your nation do with the men they take? Do they carry them away, and eat them, as thefe did?
Friday. Yes, my nation eat mans too ; eat all up.
Master. Where do they carry them?
Friday. Go to other place where they think.

Master. Do they come hither?
Friday. Yes, yes, they come hither; come other elfe place.
Master. Have you been here with them?
Friday. Yes, I been here. [Points to the N. W. fide of the ifland, which, it feems, was their fide.]
By this I underftood, that my man Friday had formerly been among the favages, who ufed to come on fhore on the father part of the ifland, on the fame man-eating occafions that he was now brought for; and fome time after, when I took the courage to carry him to that fide, being the fame I formerly mentioned, he prefently knew the place, and told me, he was there once when they eat up twenty men, two women, and one child. He could not tell twenty in Englifh, but he numbered them by laying fo many ftones in a row, and pointing to me to tell them over.
I have told this paffage, becaufe it introduces what follows; that after I had had this difcourfe with him, I afked him, how fair it was from our ifland to the fhore, and whether the canoes were not often loft: he told me loft; but that danger, no canoes ever Loft ; but that after a little way out to fea, there was a current, and a wind always one way in the morning, the other in the afternoon

This I underftood to be no more than the fets of the tide, as going out or coming in ; but I afterwards underftood it was occafioned by the great draught and reflux of the mighty Ri ver Oroonoque; in the mouth of which river, as I thought afterwards, our ifland lay; and that this land, which I perceived to the W. and N. W. was the great ifland Trinidad, on the north point of the mouth of the river: F afked Friday a thoufand queftions about the country, the inhabitants, the fea, the coaft, and what nations were near; he told me all he knew, with the greatelt opennefs imaginable I afked him the names of the feveral nations of his fort of people, but could get no other name than Caribs; from whence I eafily underftood, that there were the Caribees, which our maps place on that part of America which reaches from the mouth of the River Oroonoque to Guiana, and onwards to St. Martha : he told me, that up a great way beyond the moon, that was, beyond the fetting of the moon, which muft be weft from their country, there dwelt white-bearded men, like me, and pointed to my great whikers; which I mentioned before; and that they had killed much mans, (that was his word:) by which I underftood he meant the Spaniards, whofe cruelties in America had been fpread over the whole countries, and were remembered by all the nations from father to fond I enquired if he could tell me how I might come from this ifland, and get among thofe white men; he told me, yes, yes, I might go in two canoe; i could inot underftand what he meant by two canoe; till at laft, with great difficulty, I found he meant, that it muft be in a large great boat as big as two canoes.
This part of Friday's difcourfe began to relifh with me very well; and from this time I entertained fome hopes, that one time or other I might find an opportunity to make my efcape from this place, and that this poor favage might be a means to help me to dont.

During the long time that Friday had now been with me, and that he began to fpeak to me, and underftand me, I was not wanting to lay a foundation of religious knowledge in his mind; particularly, I afked him one
time, who made him. The poor creature did not underftand me at all, but thought I had afked who was hisfather : but I took it by another handle, and aiked him, who made the fea, the ground he walked on, and the hills. and wood? He told me, it was one old Benamuckee that lived beyond all. He could defcribe nothing of this great perfon, but that he was very old; much older, he faid, than the fea or the land, than the inoon or the ftars. I afked him then, if this old perfon had made all things, why did not all things worfhip him? He Jooked very grave, and with a perfect look of innocence faid, 'All things fay O to him.' I afked him, if the people who die in his country, went away any where. He faid, yes, they all went to Benamuckee. Then I aiked him, whether thofe they eat up went thither too, He faid, yes.
${ }^{1}$ From thefe things I began to inftruet him, in the knowledge of the true God. I told hins, that the great Maker of all things lived there, pointing up towards Heaven: that he governs the world by the fame power and providence by which he made it; that he was omnipotent; could da every thing for us; give every thing to us, take every thing from uis; and thus, by degrees, I opened his eyes: he liftened with great attention, iand received with pleafure the notion of Jefus Chrif being fent to redeemus, and of the manner of making our prayers to God, and his being able to hear us, even into Heaven. He told me, one day, that if our God could hear us up beyond the fun, he mult needs be a greater God than their Benamuckee, who lived but a little way off, and yet could not hear, till they went up to the great mountains where he dwelt, to fpeak to him. I afked if ever he went thither to fpeak to him. He faid, no, they never went that were young men; none went thither but the old men; whom he called their Oowookakee, that is, as I made him explain it to me, their religious or clergy; and that they went to fay $O$, (io he called faying prayers) and then came back, and told them what Benamuckee faid. By this I obferved, that there is priettcraft even among the moft blinded ignorant pagans in the world; and the policy of making a fecret religion, in order
to preferve the veneration of the people to the clergy, is not only to be found in the Roman, but perhaps among all religions in the world, even among the moft brutifh and barbarous favages.
I endeavoured to clear up this fraud to my man Friday; and told him, that the pretence of their old men soing ep to the mountains to fay 0 to their god Benamuckee, was a cheat; and their bringing word from thence what he faid, was much more fo; that if they met with any anfiwer, or fpoke with any one there, it muft be with an evil fpirit: and then I entered into a long difcourfe with him about the devil, the original of him, his rebel. lion againft God, his enmity to man, the reafon of it, his fetting himfelf up in the dark parts of the world to be wormipped inftead of God, and as God; and the many fratagems he made ufe of to delude mankind to their ruin ; how he had a fecret accefs to our paffions, and to our affections, to adapt his fnares fo to our inclinations, as to caufe us even to be our own tempters, and to run upon our own deftruction by ouv own choice.
I found it was not fo eafy to imprint right notions in his mind about the devil, as it was about the being of a God: nature affifted all my arguments to evidence to him even the neceffity of a great Firf Caufe, and over-ruling governing Power, ra fecret directing Providence, and of the equity and jufsice of paying homage to him that made us, and the like: but there appeared nothing of all this in the notion of an evil fpirit, of his original, his being, his nature, and above all, of his inclination to do evil, and to draw us in to do fo too: and the poor creature puzzied mie once in fuch a manner, by a queftion merely natural and innocent, that I fcaice knew what to fay to him. I had been talking a great deal to him of the power of God, his omnipotence, his dreadful averfion to fin, his being a confuming fire to the workers of iniquity; how, as he had made us all, he could deftroy us, and all the world, in a moment; and he liftened with great ferioufnefs to me all the while.
After this, I had been telling him how the divil was God's enemy in the hearts of men, and ufed all his malice
and fkilt to defeat the good defigu's of Providence, and to ruim the kingdom of Chrift in the woold, and the dike. 'Well,' fays Friday, 8 but youl fay, - God is fo ftrong, fo great, is he not © much ftrong, much might, as the ' devil ?'- 'Yes, yes,' faid I, 'Fri-- day, God is ftronger: than the devil; - God is above the devil; and there-- fore we pray to God to tread him ${ }_{6}^{6}$ under our feet, and enable us to refift his temptations, and quench his © fiery darts.' - But, fays he again, © if God much ftrong, much might, f as the devil, why God not kill the - devil, fo makehim no more wicked ?' I was ftrangely furprized at his queftion, and after all, though $I$ was now an old man, yet I was buta young doctor, and ill enough qualified for a cafuitt, or a folver of difficulties : and at firft I could not tell what to fay fo I pretended not to hear him, and afked him what he faid: but he was too eameft for an anfwer to forget his queltion; fo that he repeated it in the very fame broken words as above. By this time I had recovered myfelf a little, and I faid, 5 God will at laft - punifh him feverely; he is referved - for the judgment, and is to be calt 6 into the bottomlefs pit, to dwell with 5 everlafting fire.' This did not fatisfy Friday; but he returns upon me, repeating my words, "Referve at laft, - me no underftand: but why not kill \&the devil now, not kill great ago ?" - You may as well afk me, ${ }^{5}$ why God does not kill you and me, 6 when we do wicked things here that * offend him: we are preferved to reoffend him: we are preferved to re-
pent and be pardoned? He mufes awhile at be pardoned.' He mufes he; mighty affectionately; 's that well! 6 fo you, I, devil, all wicked, all pre-- ferve, repent, God pardonall!? Here I was run down again by him to the laft degree, and it was a teftimony to me, how the mere notions of nature, though they will guide reafonable crea, tures to the knowledge of a God, and of a worthip or homage due to the fupreme being of God, as the confequence of our nature; yet nothing but Divine Revelation can form the knowledge of Jefus Chrift, and of a redemption purchafed for us; of a mediator, of a new covenant, and of an interceffor at the footitool of God's throne; I fay, nothing but a revelation
from Heaven cain form thefe in the foul ; and that therefore the Gofpel of pur Lord and Saviour Jefus Chrilt; I mean, the Word of God, and the Spirit of God, promifed for the guide and fanctifier of his people; are the abfolutely neceffary initructors of the fouls of men in the faving knowledge of God, and the means of falvation.
God, and the means of talvation.
I therefore diverted the prefent difcourfe between me and my man, rifing up haftily, as upon fome fudden occafion of going out; then fending him for fomething a great way off, I ferioully prayed to God, that he would enable me to inftruct favingly this poor favage, affifting by his Spirit the heart of the poor ignorant creature to receive the light of the knowledge of God in Chritt, reconciling him to himielf, and would guide me to fpeak fo to him from the Word of God, as his confoience might be convinced, his eyes opened, and his foul faved: when he came again to me, I entered into a long difcourfe with him upon the fubject of the redemption of man by the Saviour of the world, and of the doctrine of the Gofpel preached from Hea ven ; viz. of the repentance towards God, and faith in our bleffed Lord Jefus. I then explained to him, as well as I could, why our bleffed Re deemer took not on him the nature of angels, but the feed of Abraham, and how for that reafon the fallen angels had no fhare in the redemption; that he came only to the loft fheep of the houfe of Ifrael, and the like.
I had, God knows, more fincerity than knowledge, in all the methods I took for this poor creature's inftruction; and mult acknowledge, what I believe all that act upon the fame principle will find, that in laying things open to him, I really informed and inftucted myfelf, in many things that either I did not know, or had not fully confidered before; but which occurred naturally to my mind, upon my fearching into them for the information of this poor favage; and I had more affection in my enquiry after things upon this occafion, than ever I felt
before; fo that whether this poor wild wretch was the better for me or no, I had great reafon to be thankful that eyer he came to me; my grief fat lighter upon me, my habitation grew comfortable to me beyond mealure;
and when I reflected, that in this falitary life which I had been confined to, I had not only been moved mydelf to look up to Heaven, and to Seek to the hand that brought pie thither, but was now to be made an inftrument, under Providence, to fave thelife, and, for aught I know, the foul of a ppor favage, and bring him to the true knowledge of religion, and of the Chriftian doctrine, that he might know Chrift Jefus, to know whom is life eternal; I fay, when I reflected upon all thefe things, a fecret joy ran through every part of my foul, and I frequent ${ }_{T}$ ly rejoiced that eyer I was brought to this place, which I had often thought the mott dreadful of all aflictions that could poffibly have befallen me.
In this thankful frame I continued all the remainder of my time, and the converfation which employed the hours between Friday and me was fuch, as made the three years which we lived there together, perfectly and compleatly happy, if any fuch thing as compleat happinefs can be found in a fublunary ftate. The favage was now a good Chriftian, a much better than I; though I have reaton to hope, and blefs God for it, that we were equally penitent, and comforted, reftored penitents : we had here the Word of God to read, and were no farther off from his Spivit to inftruck, than if we had been in England.

I always applied myfelf to reading the Scripture, and to let him know, as well as I could, the meaning of what I read; and he again, by his ferious. enquiries and queltions, mad me, as I faid before, a much better fcholar in the Scripture-knowledge, than I fhould ever have been by my own mere private reading: another thing I cannot refrain from obferving here alfo from experience, in this retired part of my life, viz. how infinite and inexpreffible a bleffing it is, that the knowfible a blefing it is, that the knowfalvation by Curift Jefus, is fo plainly laid down in the Word of God, fo eafy to be received and underftood, that as the bare reading the Scripture inade me capable of undertanding enough of my duty to carry me direstly on to the great work of fincere repentance for my fins, and taying hold of a Saviour for life and falvation, to a ftated reformation in practice, and obedience

## 110

to all God's'eommands, and this with out any teacher or inftructor? (I mean human ;) fo the plain inftiuction fufive ciently ferved to the enlightening this favage creature, and bring him tro the fuch a Chriftian, as 1 have known few equal to him in my life.
As to the difputes, wranglings, frife, and contention, which have hap pened in the world about religion, whether niceries in doctrines; or folemes of church-government, they were all perfectly ufelefs to us ; as, for aught can yet fee, they have been's to all the reft in the world: we had the fure guide to heaven, viz. the Word of God; and we had, bleffed be God, comfortable views of the Spirit of God, teaching and inftrueting us by his words © Jeading us into all truth,' and making us both willing and obedient to the inftruction of his word; and I cannot fee the leaft ufe that the greateft knowledge of the difputed points in religion, which have made fuch con fufions in the world, wquld have been to us, if we could have obtained it But I muft go on with the hiftorical part of things, and take every part in it's order.
After Friday and I became more in timately acquainted, and that he could underfand almoft all I faid to him; and fpeak fluently, though in broken Englifh, to me; Iacquainted him with my own fory, or at leaft fo much of it as related to my coming into the place, how I had lived there, and how long. I let him into the myftery (for fuch it was to him) of gunpowder and bullets, and taught him how to fhoot: I gave him a knife, which he was wonderfully delighted with; and I made him a belt with a frog hanging to it, fuch as in England we wear hangers in ; and in the frog, inftead of a hanger, I gave him a hatchet, which was not only as good a weapon in fome cafes, but much more ufeful upon many occafions.
I defcribed to him the countries of Europe, and particularly England, which I came from; how we lived, how we worfhipped God, how we behaved to one another, and how we traded in Mips to all the parts of the world. I gave him an account of the wreck which I had been on board of, and fhewed him, as near as I could, the place where fle lay; but fhe was
all beaten in pieces long before, and quite gone.
I fliewed him the ruins of our boat which we loft when we cf our boaty which I could not ftir with my whole Atrength then, but was now fallen al 2 moft all to pieces. Upon feeing thist boat, Friday iftood mufing a great while, and faid nothing; I afked him what it was he ftudied upon. At laft, fays he © Me fee fuclu boat like come to place at my nation.?
1 did not underftand him a good while; but at laft, when I had examined farther into it, I underftood by him, that a boat fuch as that had been came on fhore upon the country where he Jived; that is, as he explained it, was driven thither by ftrefs of weather : i prefently imagined, that tome European fhip muft have been calt away upon their coaft, and the boat might get loofe, and drive afhore but was fo dull, that I never one thought of men making efcape from a wreck thither, much lefs whence they might come; fo I only enquired after a defeription of the boat. a defcription of the boat.
s Friday defcribed the boat to me well enough; but brought me better to underftand him, when he added, with fome warmth, 'We fave the whité mans from drown.' Then I prefently mans, ha he there were any white mans, as he cailed them, in the boat. 'Yes,' he faid, 'the boat full of . white mans.' I afked him, how maf ny: the told upon his fingers feventeen. I afked him then, what became of them. He told me, ©They live, 'they dwell at my nation.)

This put new thought into my head again; for I prefently imagined, that thefe might be the men belonging to the fhip that was caft away in fight of my illand, as I now call it; and who, and they fhip was ftruck on the rock, and they faw her inevitably loft, had faved themfelves in their boat, and were landed upon that wild Chore among the favages.
Upon this, I enquired of him more critically, what was become of them: he affured me they lived fill there, that they had been there about four years, that the favages let them alone and gave them victuals to live afked him, how it came to pafs they did not kill them, and eat them. He faid, 'No, they make brother with
${ }^{4}$ them;' that is, as I underfood him, a truce: and then he added, "They - eat no mans but when make the war - fight :' that is to fay, they never eat any men, but fuch as come to figh with them, and are taken in battle.
It was after this, fome confiderable time, that being on the top of the hill, at the ealt-fide of the ifland, from whence, as I have faid, I had, in a clear day, difcovered the main or continent of America; Friday, the weather being very ferene, looks very earneftly towards the main land, and, in a kind of furprize, falls a jumping and dancing, and calls out to me, for I was at fome diftance from him: I afked him what was the matter. '0 'joy!' fays he; 'O glad! There, fee 6 my country, there my nation!'
I obferved an extraordinary fenfe of pleafure appeared in his face, and his eyes fparkled, and his countenance difcovered a ftrange eagernefs, as if he
had a mind to be in his own country again : and this obfervation of mine [put a areat many thoughts into me, which made me at firft not fo eafy about my new man Friday as I was before; and I made no doubt, but that if Friday could get back to his own nation again, he would not only forget all his religion, but all his obligations to me; and would be forward enough to give his countrymen an account of me, and come back, perhaps, with an hundred or two of them, and make a feaft upon me, at which he might be as merry as he ufed to be with thofe of his enemies, when they were taken in war.

But I wronged the poor honeft crea ture very much, for which I was very
${ }_{2}$ forry afterwards : however, as my jea-
loufy increafed, and held me fome weeks, I was a little more circumfpect, and not fo familiar and kind to him as before; in which I was certainly in the wrong too, the honeft grateful creature having no thoughts about it, but what confitted of the beft ${ }_{3}$ principles, both as a religious Chriftian, and as a grateful friend; as appeared afterwards to my full fatisfaction.
Whilft my jealoufy of him lafted, you may be fure I was every day pumping him, to fee if he would difcover any of the new thoughts, which I fufpected were in him; but If found eve-
ry thing he faid was fo honelt, and fo innocent, that $I$ could find nothing to nourif my fufpicion; and, if fpite of all my uneafinefs, he made me at laft entirely his own again; nor did he in the leaft perceive that I was uneafy, and therefore I could not fufpect him of deceit.

One day, walking up the fame hill, but the weather being hazy at fea, ro that we could not fee the continent, I called to him, and faid, 'Friday, do - not you wifh yourfelf in your own 'country, your own nation ?'- 'Yes, he faid, ' 1 be much O glad to, be at ' my owr nation.' - What would you ' do there ?' faid I: 'would you turn s wild again, eat man's flef again, and - be a favage as you were before? He looked full of concern, and thaking his head, faid, 'No, no, Friday 6 tell them to live good, tell them to - pray God, tell them to eat cornbread, cattle-flefh, milk; no eat man ' again.' - Why then, laid I to him, 6 they will kill you. He looked grave at that, and then faid, 'No, they no kill me, they willing love c learn.' He meant by this, they would be willing to learn. He added, they learned much of the bearded mans that came in the boat. Then $I$ afked him, if he would go back to them. He fmiled at that, and told me he could not fwim fo far. I toid him I would make a canoe for him. He told me he would go, if I would go with him. 'I go! faid I; ' why they will eat ' me if I come there, - No , no, fays he, 'me make them no eat yoll, me make they much love you.' He meant, he would tell them how I had killed his enemies, and faved his life, and fo he would make them love me. Then he told me, as well as he could, how kind they were to feventeen white men, or bearded men, as he called them, who came on fhore in difters.
From this time, I confers, I had a mind to venture over, and fee if I could poffibly join with there bearded men, who, 1 made no doubt, were Spaniards or Portugueze; not doubting but, if I could, we might find forme method to efcape from thence, being upon the continent, and a good company together, better than I, could trom an illand forty miles off the fhore, and alone without help: fo, after
fome days, I took Friday to work again, by way of difcourfe; and told him, I would give hin a boat to go back to his own nation; and accordingly I carried him to my frigate, which lay on the other fide of the ifland; and having cleared it of water, (for I always kept it funk in the water) I brought it out, Thewed it him, and we both went into it.
I found he was a mott dexterous fellow at managing it, would make it go almoft as fwift and fait again as I could: fo when he was in, I faid to bim, 'Well, now, Friday, fhall we - go to your nation?' He looked very dull at my faying fo; which, it feems, was becaufe he thought the boat too fmall to go fo far. I told him then I had a bigger; fo the next day, I went to the place where the firft boat lay which I had made, but which I could not get into the water; he faid that was big enough : but then, as I had taken no care of it, and it had lain two or three and twenty years there, the fun had fplit and dried it, that it was in a manner rotten. Friday told me, fuch a boat would do very well, and would carry much enough vittle, drink, bread; that was his way of talking.
Upon the whole, I was by this time to fixed apon my defign of going over with him to the continent, that I told him we would go and make one as big as that, and he fhould go home in it. He anfwered not one word, but looked very grave and fad. Iafked him what was the matter with him. He aiked meagain, thus: ' Why you angry - mad with Friday? what me done? I afked him what he meant; I told him I was not angry with him at all. - No angry ! no angry!' fays he, repeating the words feveral times; ' why fend Friday home away to my na - tion ?' - 'Why,' faid I, 'Friday, - did you not fay you wifhed you were - there ?'- 'Yes, yes,' fays he, 'wifh - be both there; no wifh Friday there, ' no malter there.' In a word, he would not think of going there without me. 'I go there, Friday ?' faid I: ' what fhould I do there?' He turned very quick upon me at this; ' You do great deal much good,' fays he ; ' you teach wild mans be good, fober, tame mans; you tell them know God, pray God, and live new

6 life.' - 'Alas! Friday, faid I, - thou knoweft not what thou fayeft - I am but an ignorant man myfelf. - 'Yes, yes'' fays he, 'you teachee - me good, you teachee them good: - 'No, no, Friday,' faid I, e yór - fhall go withont me; leave me here - to live by myfelf, as I did before. He looked confufed again at that word; and running to one of the hatchets which he ufed to wear, he takes it up haftily, and gives it me. \&What muf 'I do with this?" faid I to him. "You - take kill Friday,' fays he. 6 What ' muft I kill you for ?' faid I agairf. He returns very quick, © What you -fend Friday away for? Take kill Friday, no fend Friday away.' This he fpoke fo earneftly, that I faw tear's ftand in his eyes. In a word, I fo plainly difcovered the utmoft affection in him to me, and a firm refolution in him, that I told him then, and often after, that I would never fend him away from me, if he was willing to flay with me.
Upon the whole, as I found by all his difcourfe, a fettled affection to me, and that nothing fhould part himifom me, fo I found all the foundation of his defire to go to his own country, was laid in his ardent affection to the people, and his hopes of my doing them good; a thing, which, as I had no notion of myfelf, fo I had not the no notion of myreil, 10 had not the of undertaking it : but ftill I found a ftrong inclination to my attempting an efcape, as above, founded on the fuppofition gathered from the former difcourfe, viz. that there were feventeén bearded men there; and therefore, without any delay, I went to work with Friday, to find out a great tree proper to fell, and make a large peria gua or canoe, to undertake the voyage. There were trees enough in the ifland to have built a little fleet, not of periaguas and canoes only, but even of good large veffels; but the main thing I looked at, was to get one fo near the water, that we might launch it when it was made, to avoid the miftake I committed at firft.
A.t laft, Friday pitched upon a tree; for I found he knew much better than I, what kind of wood was fitteft for it; nor can I tell to this day what wood to call the tree we cut down, except that it was very like the tree we
gail fuiftick, or between that and the nicaragua-wood, for it was much of the fame colour and fmell. Friday was for burning the hollow or cavity of this tree out, to make it into a boat; but I fhewed him how rather to cut it out with tools; which, after I flewed him how to ufe, he did very handily, and in about a month's hard labour we finifhed it, and made it very handfome, efpecially when with otir axes; which I fhewed him how to handle, we cut and hewed the outfide into the true fhape of a boat; after this, however, it coft us near a fortnight's time to get her along, as it were inch by inch, upon great rollers, into the water: but when fhe was in, fhe would have carried twenty men with great eafe.

When fhe was in the water, and though fhe was fo big, it amazed me to fee with what dexterity and how fwift my man Friday could manage her, turn her, and paddle her along; fo I afked him if he would, and if we might venture over in her. 'Yes,' he faid, ' he venture over in her very well, 'though great blow wind.' How ever, I had a farther defign, that he knew nothing of, and that was to make a maft and fail, and to fit her with an anchor and cable. As to a maft, that was eafy enough to get; fo I pitched upon a ftraight young cedartree, which I found near the place, and which there was great plenty of in the ifland; and I fet Friday to work to cutit down, and gave him directions how to fhape and order it; but as to the fail, that was my partisular care. I knew I had old fails, or rather pieces of old fails enough; but as I had had them now twenty-fix fears by me, and had not been very careful to preferve them, not imagining that I fhould ever have this kind of ufe for them, I did not doubt but they were all rotten; and indeed molt of them were fo; however, I found two pieces which appeared pretty good, and with thefe I went to work, and with a great deal of pains, and aukward tedious fitching (you may be fure) for want of needles, I at length made a three-cornered ugly thing $y_{x}$ like what we call in England a fhoulder-of-mutton fail, to go with a boom at bottom, and a little fhort fprit at the topy fuch as ufually our flips long.
boats fail with, and furch as I beft knew how to manage, becaufe it was fuch an one as I ufed in the boat in which I made my efcape from Barbary, as related in the firft part of my ftory.

I was near two months performing this laft work, viz, rigging and fitting my matt and fails; for I finifhed thein very compleat, making a fmall ftay, and a fail or forefail to it, to affift if we fhould turn to windward; and, which was more than all, I fixed a rudder to the ftern of her, to fteer with; and though I was but a bungling fhipwright, yet as I knew the ufefulnefs and even neceffity of fuch a thing, I applied myfelf with fo much pains to do it, that at laft I brought it to pafs; though, confidering the many dull contrivances I had for it that fail ed, I think it coft me almoft as much labour as making the boat.
After all this was done, I had my man Friday to teach as to what be longed to the navigation of my boat ; for though he knew very well how to paddle the canoe, he knew nothing what belonged to a fail and a rudder, and was the molt amazed when he faw me work the boat to-and-again in the fea by the rudder, and how the fait gibbed, and filled this way or that way, as the courfe we failed changed; I fay, when he faw this, he ftood like one aftonifhed and amazed; however, with a little ufe, I made all thefe things familiar to him, and he became an expert failor, except that as to the compals, I could make him underAand very little of that. On the other hand, as there was very little cloudy weather, and feldom or never any fogs in thofe parts, there was the lefs occafion for a compafs, feeing the ftars were always to be feen by night, and the fhore by day, except in the rainy feafons; and then nobody cared to ftir abroad, either by land or fea.
I was now entered on the feven and twentieth year of my captivity in this place; though the three laft years that I had this creature with me, ought rather to be left out of the account, my habitation being quite of another kind than in all the reft of $m y$ time. I kept the anniverfary of my landing here with the fame thankful nefs to God for his mercies 35 at fint ; and if I had fuch caufe of acknow
ledgment at firf, $I$ had much more fo now, having fuch additional teftimonies of the care of Providence over me , and the great hopes I had of being effectually and fpeedily delivered; for I had an invincible impreffion upon my thoughts, that my deliverance was at hand, and that I fhould not be another year in this place. However, I went on with my hufbandry, digging, planting, fencing, as ofual; I gathered and cured my grapes, and did every neceffary thing, as before.
The rainy feafon was in the mean time upon me, when I kept more within-doors than at other times; fo I had ftowed our new veffel as fecure as we could, bringing her up into the creek, where, as 1 faid in the beginning, I landed my rafts from the fhip; and hauling her up to the fhore, at high-water mark, I made my man Friday dig a little dock, jult big emough to hold her, and juft deep enough to give her water enough to float in; and then when the tide was out, we made a frong darn erofs the end of it, to keep the water out ; and fo fhe lay dry, as to the tide, from the fea; and to keep the rain off, we laid a great many boughs of trees fo thick, that fhe was as well thatched as an houfe; and thus we waited for the months of November and December, in which I defigned to make my adventure.
When the fettled feafon began to come in, as the thought of my defign returned with the fair weather, I was preparing daily for the voyage; and the firft thing I did was to lay up a certairr quantity of provifion, being the ftore for the voyage; and intended in a week or a fortnight's time to open the dock, and launch out our boat. I was bufy one morning upon fomething of this kind, when I called to Friday, and bid him go to the feafhore, and fee if he could find a turtle or tortoife, a thing which we generally got once a week, for the fake of the eggs, as well as the flefh. Friday had not been long gone, when he came ruming back, and flew over my outward wall, or fence, like one that felt not the ground, or the feeps he fet his feet on; and before I had time to fpeak to him, he cried out to me, ' O mafter! © 0 malter! 0 forrow! O bad!'-- What is the matter, Friday? faid I.

- O yonder there,' fays he, 'one, twos 'three canoe! one, two, three!'-By this way of fpeaking I concluded there were fix; but on enquiry I found there were but three. ' Well, Friday,' faid I, ' do not be frighted;' fo I heartened him up as well as I could. How ever, I faw the poor fellow moft terribly fcared; for nothing ran in his head but that they were come to look for him, and would cut him in pieces and eat him. The poor fellow trembled fo, that I fcarce knew what to do with him. I comforted him as well as I could, and told him I was in as much danger as he, and that they would eat me as well as him. 'But,' faid $I_{\text {, }}$ - Friday, we maft refolve to fight - them. Can you fight, Friday? -- Me floot,' fays he; 'but there come ' many great number.'- No matter - for that,' faid I again; ' our guns - for that, faid I again; our guns
- will fright them that we do not kill. So I afked him, whether, if I refolved to defend him, he would defend me, and fand by me, and do juft as I bade him? He faid, 'Me die, when you 'bid die, malter.? So I went and fetched a good dram of rum, and gave him ; for I had been fo good an hufband of my rum, that I had a greas deal left. When he had drank ity I made him take the two fowlingpieces which we always carried, and load them with large fwan-fhot as big as fmall pitol-bullets; then I took four mufquets, and loaded them with two flugs, and five finall bullets each and my two piftols I loaded with a brace of bullets each: hung my great fword, as ufual, naked by my fide, and gave Friday his hatchet.
When I had thus prepared myfelf, I took my perfpective-glafs, and went up to the fide of the hill, to fee what I could difcover; and I found quickly by my glafs, that there were one and twenty favages, three prifoners, and three canoes; and that their whole bufinefs feemed to be the triumphant banquet upon thefe three human bodies : a ba barous feaft indeed; bus nothing more than, as I have obferved, was ufual with them!

I obferved alfo, that they were landed, not where they had done when Friday made his efcape, but nearer to my creek, where the fhore was low, and where a thick wood came clofe almoft down to the fea. This, with
the abhorrence of the inhuman errand thefe wretches came about, fo filled me with indignation, that I came down again to Friday, and told him, I was refolved to go down to them, and kill them all; and alked him if he would ftand by me. He was now gotten over his fright, and his fpirits being a little raifed with the dram I had given him, he was very chearful; and told me as before, " he wotild die - when I bid die.'

In this fit of fury, I took firft and divided the arms which I had charged, as before, between us: I gave Friday one piftol, to ftick in his girdle, and three guns tipon his Thoulder; and I took one piftol, and the other three, myfelf; and in this pofture we marched out. I took a finall bottle of rum in my pocket, and gave Friday a large bag with more powder and bullet; and as to orders, I charged him to keep clofe behind me, and not to ftir, thoot, or do any thing till I bid him and in the mean time, not to feak a word. In this pofture I fetched a compafs to my right-hand of near a mile, as well to get over the creek as to get into the wood; fo that 1 might come within fhot of them before I could be difcovered, which I had feen by my glafs it was eafy to do.
(i) While I was snaking this march, my former thoughts returning, I began to abate my refolution; I do not mean, that I entertained any fear of their number, for as they were naked, -unarmed wretches, it is certain I was fuperior to them; nay, though I had been alone: but it occurred to my zhoughts, what call, what occafion much lefs, what neceffity, I was in to go and dip my hands in blood, to attack people, who had neither done or intended me any wrong; who, as to me, were innocent, and whofe barbarous cultoms were their own difater, being in them a token indeed of God's having left them, with the other nations of that part of the world, to fuch ftupidity and to fuch inhuman courfes; but did not call me to take upon me to be a judge of their actions, muchlefs an executioner of his jultice that whenever he thought fit, he would take the caufe into his own hands, and by national vengeance punith them for national crimes; but that, in the mean time, it was none of
my bufinefs; that it was true, Friday might jultify it, becaufe he was a declared enemy, and in a flate of war with thofe very particular people, and it was lawful for him to attack them ; but I could not fay the fame with refpect to me. Thefe things were 10 warmly preffed upon my thoughts alt the way as I went, that I relolved I would only go place my felf near them, that I might obferve their barbarous feaft, and that $I$ would act then as God fhould direct; but that unlefs fomething offered that was more a call to me than yet-I knew of, I would not meddle with them.
iif With this refolution I entered the wood; and with all poffible warinefs and filence (Friday following clofe at nay heels) I marched till I came to the fkirt of the wood, on the fide which was next to them; only that one corner of the wood lay between me and them. Here I called foftly to Friday, and fheiving him a great tree, which was juft at the corner of the wood, I bade him go to the tree, and bring me word if he could fee there plainly what they were doing. He did fo, and came immediately back to nse, and told me they might be plainly viewed there; that they were all about the fire, eating the flefh of one of their prifoners; and that another lay bound upon the fand, a little from them, whom he faid they would kill next, and which fired the very foul within me. He told me, it was not one of their nation but one of the bearded men whom he had told me of, whe came to their country in the boat. I was filled. with horror at the zery naming the whitebearded man, and going to the tree, I faw plainly, by my glafs, a white man, who lay upun the beach of the fea, with his hands and his feet tied with flags, or things like rufhes, and that he was an European, and had cloaths on.

There was another tree, and a little thicket beyond it, about fifty yards nearer to them than the place where I was, which, by going a little way about, I faw Imyht come at undifcovered, and that then I frould be within half fhot of them ; fo I withheld my paffion, though $I$ was indeed enraged to the higheft degree ; and.go ing back about twenty paces, I go behind fome bufhes, which held ait
$\mathrm{P}_{2}$
the way till I came to the other tree, and then I came to a little rifing ground, which gave me a full view of them, at a diftance of about eighty yards.

I had now not a moment to lofe a for nineteen of the dreadful wretches fat upon the ground all clofe huddled together, and had juft fent the other two to butcher the poor Chrifian, and bring him, perhaps, limb by limb, to their fire; and they were fooped down to untie the bands at his feet. I turned to Friday; "Now, Friday; faid I; \& 4o as I bid thee.' Friday faid be would, 'Then, Friday,' faid I, ‘do 5 exactly as you fee me do; fail in \& nothing.' So I fet down one of the mufquets and the fowling-piece upon the ground, and Friday did the like by his; and with the other mufquet I took my aim at the favages, biedding him do the like. Then afking him if he was ready, be faid, 'Yes.': Then 4 fire at them, faid I; and the fame moment I fired alfo.
Friday took his aim fo much better than I, that on the fide that be flot, he killed two of them, and wounded three more; and on my fide, I killed pre, and wounded two. They-were, you may be fure, in a dreadful confternation; and all of them, who were not hurt, jumped up upon their feet immediately, but did not know which way to run, or which way to look; for they knew not from wheace their deffruction came. Friday kept his eyes clofe upon me, that, as I had bid him, he might obferve what I did; fo as foon as the firft flot was made, I threw down the piece, and took up the fowling-piece, and Friday did the like: he fees me cock and prefent; he did the fame again. 'Are you ready, ${ }^{6}$ Friday,' faid I. 'Yes, faid he. 4 Let fly, then,' faid $I$, in the name - of God $\%$ and with that I fired again among the amazed wretches, and fo did Friday; and as our pieces weré now loaden with what I called fwanfoot, or fimall piftol bullets, we found only two drop; but fo many were wounded, that they ran about yelling and fcreaming like mad creatures, all bloody and miferably wounded, mott of them; whereof three more fell quickly after, though not quite dead.

- Now, Feiday, faid I, laying down the difcharged pieses, and tak-
ing up the mufquet, which was yet loaden ; 'follow me!' which he did, with a deal of caurage; upon which I rufhed out of the wood, and thewed myfelf, and Friday clofe at my foot. As foon as I perceived they faw me, I fhouted as loud as I could, and bade Friday do fo too; and running as faft as I could, (which, by the way, was not very fait, being loaded with arms as I was) I made directly towards the poor victim, who was, as I faid, lying upon the beach, or Phore, between the place where they fat aind the fea. The two butchers, swho were juft going to work with him, had left him at the furprize of our firft fire, and fled in a terrible fright to the fea-fide, and had jumped into a canoe, and three more of the reft made the fame way: I turned to Friday, and bade him ftep forwards, and fire at them; he underfood me iminediately, and running about forty yards to be near them, he, fhot at them, and I thought he had killed them all; for I faw them all fall on an heap into the boat; though I faw two of them up again quickly : however, he killed two of them, and wounded the third, fo that he lay down in the bottom of the boat, as if he had been dead.
While my man Friday fired at them, I pulled out my knife, and cut the flags that bound the poor vietim, and loofing his hands and feet, I Jifted him up, and afked him in the- Portugueze tongue? what he was. He anfivered in Latin, 'Chriftianus;' but was fo weak and faint, that he could fcarce ftand or fpeak; I took my buttle out of my pocket, and gave it him, making figns that he fhould drink, which he did; and I gave him a piece of bread, which he eat; then I afked him, -what countryman he was an and he faid, - Efpagnole;' and, being a little recovered, let me know, by all the figns he could poffibly make, how much he was in my debt for his deliverance. - Seignior, faid I, with as much Spaniff as I could make up, s we will talk - afterwards, but we muft fight now : 6 if you have any ftrength left, take - this piffol and fword, and lay about 5 you. He took them very thank fully, and no fooner had he the arms in his hands, but as if they had put new vigour into him, he flew upon his mur-
derers like a fury; and had cut two of them in pieces in an inftant; for che ruth is, as the whole was a furprize to them, fo the poor creatures were fo much frighted with the noife of our pieces, that they fell down for mere amazement and fear, and had no more power to attempt their own efcape, than their flefh had to refift our fhot; and that was the cafe of thofe five that Friday fhot in the boat; for as three of them fell with the hurt they received, fo the other two fell with the fright.
1 kept my piece in my hand ftill, Without firing, being willing to keep my charge ready, becaufe I had given the Spaniard my piftol and for ord $;$ fo I called to Friday, and bade him run up to the tree from whence we firft fired, and fetch the arms which lay there that had been difcharged, which he did with great fwiftnefs; and then giving him my mufquet, I fat down myfelf to load all the reft again, and bade them come to me when they wanted. While I was loading thefe pieces, there happened a fierce engagement between the Spaniard and one of the Savages, who made at him with one of their great wooden fwords, the fame weapon that was to have killed him before, if I bad not prevented it. The Spaniard, who was as bold and as brave as could be imagined, though weak, had fought this Indian a good while, and had cut him two great wounds on his head; - but the favage, being a fout lufty felJow, clofing in with him, had thrown him down, (being faint) and was wringing may fword out of his hand, when the Spaniard, though undermoft, wifely quitting his fword, drew the piftol from chis girdle, fhot the favage through the body, and killed him upon the fpot, -before I, who was running to help, could come near him.
Friday, being now left at his liberty, purfued the flying wretches with no veapon in his hand but his hatchet; and with that he difpatched thofe three, *who, as I faid before, were wounded , at firft and fallen, and all the reft he could come up with ; and the Spaniard coming to me for a gun, I gave him one of the fowling-pieces, withwhich he purfued two of the favages and wound. ed them both; but as he was not able to run, they both got from him into the woods, where F riday purfued them,
and killed one of them; but the other was too nimble for him $;$ and though he was wounded, yet he plunged inte the fea, and fwam with all his might off to thofe who were left in the canoez which three in the canoe, with one wounded, who we knew nat whether he died or no, were all that efcaped our hands of one and twenty. The account of the reft is as follows:

Killed at our fhot from the tree.
2 Killed at the next fhot.
2 Killed by Friday in the boat.
2 Killed by ditto, of thofe at first wounded.
$x$ Killed by ditto, in the wood 3 Killed by the Spaniard.
4 Killed, being found dropt here and there, of their wourds, or killed by Friday in his chace of them. 4 Efcaped in the boat, whereof one wounded, if not dead.

## 2 I In all.

Thofe that were in the canoe, worked hard to get out of gun-fhot; and though Friday made two on three fhot at them, I did not find that he hit any of them. Friday would fain have had me take one of their canoes, and purfue them ; and indeed I was very anxious about their efcape, left, carrying the news home to their people, they fhould come back, perhaps, with two or three hundred of their canoes, and idevour us by mere multitudes; fo I confented to purfie them by fea; and running to one of their canoes, I jumped in, and bade Friday follow me; but when I was in the canoe, I was furprized to find another poor creature lie there alive, bound hand and foot $_{2}$ as the Spaniard was, for the flaughter, and almoft dead with fear, not knowing what the matter was ; for he had not been able to look up over the fide of the boat, he was tied fo hard neck and heels, and had been. tied fo long, that he had really little life in bim.
I immediately out the twifted flags, or ruftes, which they had bound him with, and would have helped him up; but he could not ftand or fpeak, but groaned moft piteoufly, believing, it feems, Itill that he was only unbound in order to be killed.

When

When Friday came to him, I bade him fpeak to him, and tell him of his deliverance; and pulling out my bottie, made him give the poor wretch a dram; which, with the news of his dram; which, with the news of his fat up in the boat; but when Friday came to hear him fpeak, and looked in his face, it would have moved any one to tears, to have feen how Friday kiffed him, embraced him, hugged him, cried, laughed, hallooed, jumped about, danced, fung, then cried again, wrung his hands, beat his own face and head, and then fung and jumped about again, like a diffracted creature. It was a good while before I could make him fpeak to me, or tell me what was the matter; but when he came a little to himfelf, he told me that it was his father.
It was not eafy for me to exprefs how it moved me, to fee what extafy and filial affection had worked in this poor favage, at the fight of his father, and of his being delivered from death; nor indeed can I defcribe half the extravagances of his affection after this; for he went into the boat and out of the beat a great many times : whien he went in to him, he would fit down by him, open his breaft, and hold his father's head clofe to his bofom, half an hour together, to nourih it; then he took his arms and ancles, which were numbed and fiff with the binding, and chafed and rubbed them with his hands; and I, perceiving what the cafe was, gave him fome rum out of my bottle to rub them with, which did them a great deal of good.

This action put an end to our purfuit of the canoe with the other favages, who were now gotten almoft out of fight ; and it was happy for us that we did not; for it blew fo hard within two hours after, and before they could be gotten a quarter of their way, and continued blowing fo hard all night, and that from the north-weft, which was againft them, that I could not fuppofe their boat could live, or that they ever eached to their own coaft.
But to return to Friday. He was fo buly about his father, that I could not find in my heart to take him off for fome time; but, after I thought I could leave him a little, I called him to me, and he came juinping and laughing, and pleafed to the higheft extreme. Then I afked him, if he
had given his father any bread. Ho fhook his head, and faid, 'None: 'tugly dog eat all up felf.' So I gave him a cake of bread out of a little pouch I carried on purpofe; I alfo gave hin a dram for himfelf; but he would not tafte it, but carried it to his father. I had in my pocket alfo two or three bunches of my raifins; fo I gave him a handful of them for his father. He had no fooner given his father thefe raifins, but I faw him come out of the boat, and run away as if he had been bewitched. He ran at fuch a rate, (for he was the fwifteft fellow of his feet that ever I faw; I) fay, he ran at fuch a rate, that he was out of fight as it were in an inftant; and though I called and hallooed too after him, it was all one; away he went, and in a quarter of an hour I faw him come back again, though not fo faft as he went; and as he came nearer, I found his pace was flacker becaufe he had fomething in his hand.
When he came up to me, I found he had been quite home for an earthen jug or pot, to bring his father fome fref water; and that he had got two more cakes or loaves of bread. The bread he gave me, but the water he carried to his father; however, as was very thirity too, I took a little fup of it: this water revived his father more than all the rum or fpirits I had given him; for he was juft faint-ing with thirft.
When his father had drank, I called him to know if there was any water left; he faid, yes; and I badehim give it to the poor Spaniard, who was in as much want of it as his father; and I fent one of the cakes, that Friday
broughit, to the Spaniard to brouglit, to the Spaniard too, who was indeed very weak, and was repofing himfelf upon a green place, under the fhade, of a tree, and whofe limbs were alfo very ftiff, and very much fwelled with the rude bandage he had been tied with: when I faw that upon Friday's coming to him with the water, he fat up and drank, and took the bread and began to eat, ful of raifins; and gave him an handface of raiths; he looked up in my face with all the tokens of gratitude and thankfulnefs that could appear in any countenance; but was fo weak, notwithftanding he had fo exerted himfelf in the fight, that he could not
ftand up upon his feet; he tried to do it two or three times, but was really not able, his ancles were fo fwelled and fo painful to him; fo I bade him fit ftill, and caufed Friday to rub his ancles, and bathe them with rum, as he had done his father's.
I obferved the poor affectionate creature every two minutes, or perhaps lefs, all the while he was here, turned his head about, to fee if his father was in the fame place and pofture as he left him fitting: and at laft he found he was not to be feen; at which he ftarted up, and without feaking a word, flew with that fwiftnefs to him, that one could fcarce perceive his feet to touch the ground as he went; but when he came, he only found he had laid himfelf down to eafe his limbs; fo Friday came back to me prefently, and I then fpoke ta the Spaniard to let Friday help him up, if he could, and lead him to the boat, and then he fhould carry him to our dwelling, where I would take care of him ; but Friday, a lufty young fellow, took the Spaniard quite up upon his back, and carried him away to the boat, and fet him down foftly upon the fide or gunnel of the canoe, with his feet in the infide of it, and then lifted them quite in, and fet him clofe to his father; and prefently ftepping out again, launched the boat off, and paddled it along the fhore fafter than I could walk, though the wind blew pretty hard too: fo he brought them both fafe into our creek; and leaving them in the boat, runs away to fetch the other canoe. As he paffed me, I fpoke to him, and afked him, whither he went. He told me, 'Go, fetch more - boat.' So away he went, like the wind, for fure never man or horfe ran like him; and he had the other canoe in the creek, almoft as foon as I got to it by land; fo he wafted me over, and then went to help our new guefts out of the boat, which he did: but they were neither of them able to waik; fo that poor Friday knew not what to do.

To remedy this, I went to work in my thought; and calling to Friday to bid them fit down on the bank while he came to me, I foon made a kind of hand-barrow to lay them on; and Friday and I carried them up both together upon it between us: but when we
got them to the ouffide of our wall or fortification, we were at a worfe lofs than before; for it was impoffible to get them over; and I was refolved not to break it down : fo I fet to work again; and Eriday and I, in about two hours time, made a yery handfome tent, covered with old fails, and, above that, with boughs of trees; being in the fpace without our outward fence, and between that and the grove of young wood which I had planted: and here we made two beds, of fuch things as I had, viz. of good rice-ftraw, with blankets laid upon it, to lie on, and another to cover them, on each bed.
My inand was now peopled, and I thought myfelf very rich in fubjects; and it was a merry reflection which I frequently made, how like a king I łooked. Firft of all, the whole country was my own mere property; fo that I had an undoubted right of dominion: fecondly, my people were perfectly fubjected; I was abfolutely lurd and lawgiver; they all owed their lives to me, and were ready to lay down their lives, if there had been occafion for it, for mie: it was remarkable too, I had but three fubjects, and they were of three different religions; my man Friday was a Proteftant, his father a Pagan and a canibal, and the Spaniardwas a Papift. However, I allowed liberty of confcience throughout my dominions: but this by the way.
As foon as I had fecured my two weak refcued prifoners, and given them fhelter, and a place to reft thenz upon, I began to think of making fome provition for them: and the firit thing I did, I ordered Friday to take a yearly goat, betwixt a kid and a goat, out of my particular flock, to be killed: then I cut off the himder quarter, and, chopping it into fimall pieces, I fet Friday to work to boiling and itewing, and made them a very good difh, I affure you, of flefh and broth, having put fome barley and rice alfo into the broth; and as I cooked it without doors (for I made no fire within my inner wall) fo I carried it all into the new tent; and having fet a table there for them, I fat down and eat my dinner alfo with them; and, as well as I could, cheared them and encouraged them, Fiday being my interpreter, efpecially to his father, and indeed to the Spanianis too;

## 120

for the Spaniard fooke the language of the favages pretty well.
After we had dined, or rather fups ped, I ordered Friday to take one of the canoes, and go and fetch our mufquets, and other fire-arms, which, for want of time, we had left upon the place of battle; and the next day $I$ ordered him to go and bury the dead bodies of the favages, which lay open to the fun, and would prefently be offenfive; and I alfo ordered him to buy the horrid remains of their barbarous feaft, which I knew where pretty much, and which I could not think of doing myfelf; nay, I could not Bear to fee them, if I went that way. All which he punetaally performed, and defaced the very appearance of the favages being there; fo that when I went again, I could foaice know where it was, otherwife than by the corner of the wood pointing to the place.

I then began to enter into a little converfation with my two new fubjeets; and firtt, I fee Friday to enof the of his father, what he thonght of the efcape of the favages in that canoe, and whether he might expect a return of them, with apower too great for us to refift. His firf opinion was, that the favages in the boat never could live out the form, which blew that night they went off, but muft of neceflity be drowned, or driven fouth to thofe other fhores, where they were as fure to be devoured, as they were to be drowned if they were caft away: but as to what they would do if they came fafe on floye, he faid he knew not; but it was his opinion, that they were fo dreadfully frighted with the masner of being attacked, the noife, and the fire, that he believed they would tell their people, they wereall killed by thunder and lightning, and not by the hand of man; and that the two which appeared (viz. Friday and 1) were two theavenly fpirits or fuvies, come down to deftroy them, and not men with weapons. This, he faid; he knew, becaufe be beard them all ery out fo in their language to one another; for it was impoffible for thent to conceive that a man fhould dart fire, and fpeak thurder, and kill at at dif tance, without difting up the hand, as was done now, And this old favage
vas in the right; for, as I undertood fince, by other hands, the favages of that part never attempted to go over to the ifland afterwards. They were fo terrified with the accounts given by thofe four men (for it feems they did efcape the fea) that they believed, whoever went to that inchanted illand, would be deftroyed with fire from the gods.

This, however, I knew not, and therefore was under continual appreHenfrons for a good while, and kept always upon my guard, I and all my army; for as we were now four of us I would have ventured upon an hundred of them fairly in the open field at any time.
In a little time, however, no more canoes appearing; the fear of their coming wore off, and I began to take my former thoughts of a voyage to the hain into confideration; being likewife affured by Friday's father, that I might depend upon good ufage frorts their nation on his account, if would go.
But my thoughts were a little fu* fpended, when I had a ferious difcourfe with the Spaniard, and when I underftood, that there were fixteen more of his countrymen and Portu* gueze, who having been caft away, and made their efcape to that fide, liv, ed there at peace indeed with the favages, but were very fore put to it for neceffaries, and indeed for life: I afk ed him all the particulars of their voyage, and found they were a Spiat nifh fhip, bound from the Rio de la Plata to the Mavannah, being directed to leave their loading there, which was chiefly hides and filver, and to bring back what European goods they could meet with there; that they had five Portugueze feamen on board, whonit they took out of another wreck; that five of their own men were drowned when firt the fhip was loft; and that thefe efcaped through infinite dangers and hazards, and arrived, almoft ftarved, on the canibal coaft, where they expected to have been devoured every moment.
He told me, they had fome arms with them, but they were perfectly ufelefs, for that they had neither powder: or ball, the wafling of the fea having fpoiled all thein powdery, but a
little which they ufed at their firf landing, to provide themfelves fome food.
I aiked him what he thought would become of them there; and if they had formed no defign of making any efcape. He faid, they had many confultations about it; but that having neither veffel, nor tools to build one, or provifions of any kind, their counfels always ended in tears and defpair. - I afked him how he thought they would receive a propofal from me, which might tend towards an efcape; and whether, if they were all here, it might not be done. I told him with freedom, I feared moftly their treachery and ill ufage of me, if I put my life in their hands; for that gratitude was no inherent virtue in the nature of man; nor did men always fquare their dealings by the obligations they had received, fo much as they did by the advantages they expected: I told him, it would be very hard that I fhould be the inftrument of their deliverance, and that they fhould afterwards make me their prifoner in New Spain, where an Englifhman was certain to be made a facrifice, what neceffity, or what accident foever, brought him thither; and that I had rather be delivered up to the favages, and be devoured alive, than fall into the mercilefs claws of the priefts, and be carried into the Inquifition. I added, that otherwife I was perfuaded, if they were all here, we might, with fo many hands, build a bark large enough to carry us all away, either to the Brazils fouthward, or to the iflands or Spanifh coaft northward; but that if, in requital, they fhould, when I had put weapons into their hands, carry me by force among their own people, I might be ill ufed for my kindnefs to them, and make my cafe worfe than it was before.
He anfwered with a great deal of candour and ingenuity, that their condition was fo miferable, and they were fo fenfible of it, that he believed they wouldabhor the thought of ufing any man unkindly that fhould contribute to their deliverance; and that, if I pleafed, he would go to them with the old man, and difcourfe with them about it, and would return again, and bring me their anfwer; that he would make conditions with them upon their folemn oath, that they would be abfo-
lutely under my leading, as their commander and captain; and that they Should fwear upon the Holy Sacraments and Gofpel, to be true to me, and to go to fuch Chriftian country as I thould agre to, and no other; and to be directed wholly and abfolutely by my orders, till they were landed fafely in fuch country as I intended; and that he would bring a eontract from them under their hands for that purpofe.
Then he told me, he would firt fwear to me himfelf, that he would never ftir from me as long as he lived, till I gave him order; and that he would take my fide to the lait drop of blood, if there fhould happen the leait breach of faith among his countrymen.
He told me, they were all of them very civil honeft men, and they were under the greateft diftrefs imaginable, having, neither weapons nor-cloaths, nor any food, but at the mercy and difcretion of the favages; out of all hopes of ever returning to their own country; and that he was fure, if I would undertake their relief, they would live and die by me.
Upon thefe affurances, I refolved to venture to relieve them, if poffible, and to fend the old favage and this Spaniard over to them to treat. But when he had gotten all things in readinefs to go, the Spaniard himfelf itarted an objection, which had fo much prudence in it on one hand, and fo much fincerity on the other hand, that I could not but be very well fatisfied in it; and, by his advice, put off the deliverance of his comrades for at leaft half a year. The cafe was thus:

He had been with us now about a month; during which time I bad let him fee in what manner I had provided, with the affitance of Providence, for my fupport; and he faw evidently what ftock of corn and rice I had lain up; which, as it was more than fufficient for myfelf, fo it was not fufficient, at leaft, without good hufbandry, for my family, now it was increafed to number four: but much lefs would it be fufficient, if his coun'trymen, who were, as he faid, fourteen ftill alive, fhould come over; and leaft of all would it be fufficient to vietual our veffel, if we fhould build one, for a voyage to any of the Chrif-
sian colonies of America. So he told me, he thought it would be more advifeable, to let him and the other two dig and cultivate fome more land, as much as I could fpare feed to fow; and that we fhould wait another harveft, that we might have a fupply of corn for his countrymen when they Chould come; for want might be a temptation to them to difagree, or not to think themfelves delivered, otherwife than out of one difficulty into another. 'You know,' fays he, 'the chil-- dren of Ifrael, though they rejoiced - at firft at their being delivered out of 6 Egypt, yet rebelled even againft God - himfelf, that delivered them, when - they came to want bread in the wil' dernefs.'
His caution was fo feafonable, and his advice fo good, that I could not but be very well pleafed with his pro pofal, as well as I was fatisfied with his fidelity. So we fell to digging, all four of us, as well as the wooden tools we were furnifhed with permitted; and in about a month's time, by the end of which it was feed time, we had gotten as much land cured and trimmed up as we fowed twenty-two bufhels of barley on, and fixteen jars of rice; which was, in fhort, all the feed we had to fpare; nor indeed did we leave ourfelves barley fufficient for our own food for the fix months that we had to expect our crop; that is to fay, reckoning from the time we fet our feed afide for fowing; for it is not to be fuppofed it is fix months in the ground in that country.
Having now fociety enough, and our number being fufficient to put us out of fear of the favages, if they had come, unlefs their number had been very great, we went freely all over the ifland, wherever we found occafion; and as here we had our efcape or deliverance apon our thoughts, it was impolfible, at leaft for me, to have the means of it out of mine; to this purpofe, I thought fit feveral trees, which I Friday and his father to cutting them down; and then I caufed the Spaniard, to whom I imparted my thoughts on that affair, to overfee and direct their work. I fhewed them with what indefatigable pains $I$ had hewed a large kree into fingle planks, and I caufed them to do the like, till they had made
about a dozen large planks of good oak, near two feet broad, thirty-five feet long, and from two inches to four inches thick: what prodigious labour it took up, any one may imagine.
At the fame time I contrived to inçeafe my little flock of tame goats as much as I could; and to this purpofe I made Friday and the Spaniard go out one day, and my felf, with Friday, the next day; for we took our turns : and by this means we got about twenty young kids to breed up with the reft; for whenever we fhot the dam, we faved the kids, and added them to our flock. But above all, the feafon for curing the grapes coming on, I caufed fuch a prodigious quantity to be hung up in the fun, that I believe, had we been at Alicant, where the raifins of the fun are cured, we fhould have filled fixty or eighty barrels; and thefe, with our bread, was a great part of our food, and very good living too, I affure you; for it is an exceeding nourifhing food.
It was now harveft, and our crop in good order; it was not the moft plentiful increafe I had feen in the to andiver , however, it was enough to anfwer our end; for, from twentytwo bufhels of barley, we brought in and threfhed out above two hundred and twenty burhels, and the like in proportion of the rice; which was fore enough for our food to the next harvelt, though all the fixteen Spaniards had been on fhore with me; or, if we had been ready for a voyage, it would very plentifully have victualled our fhip, to have carried us to any part of the world; that is to fay, of America. When we had thus houfed and fecured our magazine of corn, we fell to work to make more wicker-work ; viz. great bafkets, in which we kept it; and the Spaniard was very handy and dexterous at this part, and often blamed me, that I did not make fome things for defence, of this kind of work; but I faw no need of it. And now having a full fupply of food for all the guefts expected, I gave the Spaniard leave to go over to the main, to fee what he could do with thofe he deft behind him there: I gave him a frict, charge in writing, not to bring any man with him who would not firft fivear in the prefence of himfelf and of the old favage, that he would na way injure,
fight
fight with, or attack; the perfon he fhould find in the ifland, who was $f 0$ kind to fend for them in order to their deliverance; but that they would ftand. by and defend him againft all fuch attempts; and wherever they went, would be entirely under, and fubjected to his command; and that this hould be put in writing, and figned with. their hands. How we were to have this done, when I knew they had neither pen or ink, that indeed was a queftion which we never alked.
Under thefe inftructions, the Spaniard and the old favage (the, father of Friday) went away in one of the canoes, which they might be faid to come in, or rather were brought in, when they came as prifoners, to be devoured by the favages.
I gave each of them a mufquet with a firelock on it, and about eight charges of powder and ball ; charging them to be very good hufbands of both, and not to ufe either of them but upon urgent occafions.
This was a chearful work, being the firft meafures ufed by me in view of my deliverance for now twentyfeven years and fome days. I gave them provifions of bread, and of dried grapes, fufficient for themfelves for many days, and fufficient for their countrymen for about eight days time; and wifhing them a good voyage, I let them go, agreeing with them about a fignal they fhould hang out at their feturn, by which I fhould know them again when they came back, at a diftance, before they came on fhore.

They went away with a fair gale, on the day that the moon was at the fuli; by my account in the month of October; but as for the exact reckoning of days, after I had once loft it, I could never recover it again; nor had I kept even the number of years fo punctually; as to be fure that I was right; though, as it proved, when I afterwards examined my account, I found I had kept a true reckoning of years.
It was no lefs than eight days I waited for them, when a ftrange and unforefeen accident intervened, of which the like has not, perhaps, been heard of ip hiftory. I was faft afleep in my hutch one morning, when my man Friday came running in to me,
and called aloud, 'Mafter! mafter ! ' they are come, they are come!'
I jumped up; and, regardlefs of danger, I went out as foon as I could get my cloaths on, through my little grove, which, by the way, was by this, time grown to be a very thick wood: I fay, regardlefs of danger, I went without my arms, which was not my cuftom to do; but I was furprized, when turning my eyes to the fea, I prefently faw a boat at about a league and a half's diftance, ftanding in for the fhore, with a fhoulder of mutton fail, as they call it, and the wind blowing pretty fair to bring them, in: alfo I obferred prefently, that they did not come from that fide which the fhore lay on, but from the fouthermoft end of the ifland; upon this I called. Friday in, and bid him lie clofe, for thefe were not the people we looked for, and that we did not know yet whether they were friends or enemies.
In the next place, I went in to fetch my perfpective-glafs, to fee what I could make of them; and having taken the ladder out, I climbed up to the top of the hill, as I ufed to do when I was apprehenfive of any thing, and to take my view the plainer without being difcovered.
I had fcarce fet my foot on the hill, when my eye plainly difcovered a fhip lying at an anchor, at about two leagues and a half's diffance from me, S. S. E. but not above a league and an half from the fhore. By my obfervation it appeared plainly to be an Englifh Mip, and the boat appeared to be an Englifh long-boat.

I cannot exprefs the confufion I was in, though the joy of feeing a fhip, and one whom I had reafon to believe was manned by my own countrymen, and confequently friends, was fuch as I cannot defcribe; but yet I had fome fecret doubts hung about me, I cannot tell from whence they came, bidding me keep upon my guard. In the firlt place, it occurred to me to confider what bufinefs an Englifh ship could have in that part of the world, fince it was not the way to or from any part of the world where the Engliih had any traffick; and I knew there had been no ftorms to drive them in there, as in diftrefs; and that if they were Englifin really, it was moft probable, that
they were here upon no good defign; and that I had better continue as I was, than fall into the hands of thieves and murderers.
Let no man defpife the fecret hints and notices of danger, which fometimes are given him when he may think there is no poffibility of it's being real. That fuch hints and notices are given us, I believe few that have made any obfervations of things' can deny; that they are certain difcovelies of an invifible world, and a converfe of fpirits, we cannot doubt; and if the tendency of them feenrs to be to warn us of danger, why fhould we not fuppofe they are from fome friendly agent (wherher Supreme, or inferfor and fubordinate, is not the queftion) and that they are given for our good ?

The prefent queftion abundantly confirms me in the juifice of this reafoning; for liad i not been made cauitious by this fectet admonition ${ }_{2}$ come it from whence it will, $T$ had been'undone inevitally, and in a far worfe condition than before, as you will fee prefently.

I had not kept myfelf long in this polture, but I faw the boat drew near the thore, as if they looked for a creek to thruft in at for the convenience of landing; however, as they did not come quite far enough, they did fiot fee the liftle inlet where I formerly landed my fafts, but run their boat on fhore upon the beach, at about half a mile from me, whith was very happy for me; for orherwife they would have landed juft, as II may fay, at my door, and would have foon beaten me out of my calte, and perhaps have plonder ell me of atl I had.
When they werel on flore, I was fllly fitisffed they were Englifhmen at lealt, molt of them: one or two 1 thought were Dutch, but it did not prove fo: "There were in all eleven men, whereof three of them I found were unarmed, and (as I thought) bound; and when the firft four or five of them wefe jumped on fiore, they took thofethree out of the boat as prifoners. One of the three I could perceive ufing the moft paffonate geftures of intreaty, affliction, and defpair, even to a kind of extravagance; the other two I could perceive lifted up their hands fometimes, and appeared con-
cerned indeed, but not to fuch a degree as the firft.
I was perfectly confounded at the fight, and knew not what the meaning of it thould be. Friday called out to me in Englifh, as well as he could, - O mafter! you fee Englifh mans eat - prifoners as well as favare mans eat
'. Why,' faid I, 'Friday, do you think ' they are going to eat them then ?''Yes,' fays Friday,' they will eat ' them.- 'No, rio', faid I, 'Friday; - I am afraid they will murder them, ' indeed; but you' may be fure the 'will not eat them? may be fure they
All this while I h
what the matter really no thought of what the matter really was, but ftood trembling with the horror of the fight, expecting every moment when the three prifoners flould be killed; nay, once I faw one of the villains lift up his arm with a great cutlace (as the feamen call it) or fiword, to itrike one of the poor men; and I expected to fee him fall every moment, at which all the blood in 'my body' feemed to run chill in my veins.
I wifhed heartily now for our Spaniard, and the lavage that was gone with him; or that I had any way to have come undifcovered within fhot of them, that I might have refcued the three men; for I faw no fire-arms they had among them? but it fell out to my mind another way
After I had obferved the outrageou ufage of the three men by the infolent feamen, I obferved the fellows ran feattêring about the land, as if they wanted to fee the country 4 I obferved alfo, that the three other men had liberty to go where they pleafed; but they fat down all three upon the ground very penfive, and looked like men in defpair.
This put me in mind of the firft time when I came on fhore, and began to look about me; how I gave myfelf over for looft, how wildly I looked round me, what dreadful apprebenfions I had, and how I lodged in the tree all night for fear of being devoured by wild beafts.

As I knew nothing that night of the rupply I was to receive by the providential driving of the Mhip nearer the land by the forms and tide, by which I have fince been fo long nourifhed and fupported; fo thefe thice poor de-
folate

Solate men knew nothing how certain of deliverance and fupply they were how near it was to them, and how effectually and really they were in a condition of fafety, at the fame tinie they thought themfelves loft, and their cale defperate.

So little do we fee before us in the world, and fo much reafon have we to depend chearfully upon the Great Maker of the world, that he does not leave his creatures fo abfolutely deftitute, but that in the worft circumfances they have always fomething to be thankful for, and fometimes are nearer their deliverance than they imagine; nay, are even brought to their deliverance by the means by which they feem to be brought to their defruction.
It was jult at the top of high water when thele people come on fhore, and while partly they food parleying with the prifoners they brought, and partly while they rambled about to fee what kind of plaee they were in, they had carelefsly faid till the tide was fpent, and the water was ebbed confiderably away, leaving their boat aground.
They had left two men in the boat, who, as I found afterwards, having drank a little too much brandy, fell afleep; however, one of them waking fooner than the other, and finding the boat too faft aground for him to itir it, hallooed for the reft who were fraggling about, upon which they alt foon came to the boat; but it was palt all their ftrength to launch her, the boat being very heavy, and the fhore on that fide being a fort ouzy fand, almoft tike a quick-fand.

In this condition, like true feamen, who are, perhaps, the leaft of allmankind, given to fore-thought, they gave it over, and away they frolled about the country again; and I heard one of them fay aloud to another, (calling them off from the boat;) ' Why, let her 6 alone, Jack, can't ye? fhe'll float 6 next tide.' By which I was fully confirmed in the main enquiry, of what countrymen they were.

All this while I kept myfelf clofe, not once daring to ftir out of my cafte, any farther than to my place of obfervation, near the top of the hill; and very glad I was, to think how well it was fortified. I knew it was no lefs than ten hours before the boat could
be on float again, and by that time it would be dark, and I might be more at liberty to fee their motions, and to hear their difcourfe, if they had any.

In the mean time I fitted myfelt up for a battle, as before, though with more caution, knowing I had to do with anorher kind of enemy than I had at firt. I ordered Friday alfo, whom I had made an excellent markiman with his gun, to load himfelf with arms. I took myfelf two fowlingpieces, and I gave him three mufquets. My figure, indeed, was very fierce; I had my formidable goat-fkin coat on, with the great cap I mentioned, a naked fword, two piftols in my belt, and a gun upon each fhoulder.
It was iny delign, as I faid above, not to have made any attempt till it was dark; but about two o'clock, being the heat of the day, I found that in fhort they were all gone ftraggling into the woods, and, as I thought, were all laid down to fleep. The three poor diffiefled men, too anxious for their condition to get any fleep, were however fet down under the fhelter of a great tree, at about/a quarter of a mile from me, and, as I thought, out of fight of any of the reft.
Upon this I refolved to difcover myfelf to them, and learn fomething of their condition. Immediately I marched in the figure above, my man Friday at a good diftance behind me, as formidable for his arms as I, but not making quite fo faring a fpectre-like figure as I did.

I came ass near them undifcovered as I could, and then, before any of them faw me, I called aloud to them in Spanif, ' What are ye, gentlemen?

They ftarted up at the noife, but were ten times more confounded when they law me, and the uncouth figure that I made. They made no anfiwer at all, They made no antwer juft, but I thought I perceived them jutt going to fly from me, when I fpoke of them in Englith. Gentiemen, faid I, ' do not be furprized at me; 6 perhaps you may have a friend near - you, when fou did not expect it.' -- He muft be fent directly from Heavent then, fil drectly from Heagravely tome, and per them very at the fame time pulling off his hat is is pait the help of man.'-' All help ' is from Heaven, Sir,' faid I: ' but a can you put a ftranger in the way

## 126

- how to help you? for you feem to
- mew to be in fome great diftrefs: I
you feemed you landed; and when
you feemed to make application to
- the brutes that came with you, I
- faw one of them lift up his fword to 'kill you.'
The poor man, with tears running down his face, and trembling, looking like one aftonifhed, returned, 6 Am -I I talking to God or man ? Is it a Am - man, or an angel ?' - 'Be it a real ${ }^{-}$- man, or an angel ?'m ' Be in no fear c about that, Sir, faid I: • if God
${ }_{6} 6$ had fent an ange! to relieve you, he
< would have come better cloathed, 5 and ammed after another manner - than you fee me in. Pray lay afide - your fears; I am a man, lay afide Eglifhman, and difoofed to an Engifhman, and difpofed to affift you, - you fee; I have one fervant only; we have arms and ammunition; tell
us freely, Can we ferve you? What is your cafe?
Our cafe, faid he, 6 Sir, is too E lang to tell you, while our mor-
devers are fo neax; but, in fhort,
Sir, I was commander of that fhip,
${ }^{6}$ my men having mutinied againft me,
they have been hąrdly prevailed on
- not to murder me; and at laft have
- fet me on thore in this defolate phave
- with thefe two then defolate place,
- my mate, the other with me, one
- my mate, the other a paffienger, where
we expected to perifh, believing the
- place to be uninhabited, and know not yet what to think of it.
\& mies?" faid I " 'dofe brutes, your ene-
mies ?' faid I; 'do you know where
't they are gone?'- There they are,
ESir,' faid he, pointing to a thicket
of trees; s my heart trembles for fear
f they have feen us trembles for fear
- fpeak; if they us, and heard you
- tainly murder have, they will cer-
- Have they us all.

He anfwered they fare-arms?' faid I, and one which they only two pieces, Well then,' faid left in the boat to me. I fee they, leave the reft - an eafy thing to kill all anleep; it is - fhall we rather to kill them all; but He told me ther take them prifoners? villains me there were two defperate villains among them, that it was icarce fafe to hew any mercy to; but if they were fecured, he believed all the reft would return to their duty. I afked bim which they were? He told me he could not at that diftance defcribe theme but he would obey my orders them; thing I would direct. \&Well,' faid $I_{\text {, }}$

Ih us retreat out of their view or hearing, left they awake, and we ingly went barther.' So they willcovered covered us from them.
' Lureok you, Sir,' faid I, • if I ven-
Sture upon your deliverance, are you willing to make two conditions with 'me?" He anticipated my propofals, by telling me, that both he and the raip, if recovered, fhould be wholly directed and commanded by me in every thing; and if the by me in recovered, he would live and die with me in what part of the world foever I would fend him; and the two other men faid the fame. and the two other - Well fame.

- Well,' faid I, 'my conditions are - but two: Finf, That wibile you flay on this ifland with me, you will not pretend to any authority here; and it I put arms into your hands, you 6 will upon all occafions give them up to me, and do no prejudice to me or mine, upon this ifand and me or 6 mear - ders.
'Scondly,
be recovered, you will Mip is or may - my man to Eng will caxiy me and He gave England paffage free.? He gave me all the affurance that the invention and faith of a man could devife, that he would comply with thefe moft reafonable demanids, with belides would owe his life to me, and acknowledge it upon all to me, and long as he lived upon all occafions as © We he lived.
${ }^{6}$ Well then,' faid I, 'bereare three - mulquets for you with powder and - ball: tell me next what you think is
 was able; but offered gratifude that he guided by me it offered to be wholly guided by me. I told him, I thought it was hard venturing any thing, but the beft method I could think of, was to fire upon them at once, as they lay volley any were not killed at the fivft valley, and offered to fubmit, we might Gave them, and fo put it wholly upon He providence to direct the hot. He faid very modefly, that he was loth to kill them, if he could belp it; but that thofe two were incorrigible villains, and had been the authors of all the mutiny in the mip and if they efcaped, we fhould be un done fill; for they would go on board and bring the whole fip on board and deftroy us all. 'Well, then,? faid

I, ' ne-

I, s receffity legitimates my advice; - for it is the only way to fave our ' lives. However, feeing him ftill cautious of fleedding blood, I told him, they fould go themfelves, and manage as they found convenient.
In the middle of this difcourle we heard fome of them awake, and foon after we faw two of them on their feet: I anked him, if either of them were the men, who he had faid were the heads of the mutiny. He faid, ‘No.- - Well, then,' faid I, ' you may let them efcape, and Provi-- dence feems to have wakened them 6 on purpofe to fave themfelves : now, 6 if the reft efcape you, it is your - fault.?

Animated with this, he took the mufquet I had given him in his hand, and pittol in his beit, and his two comrades with him, with each man a piece in his hand: the two men who were with him going firtt, made fome noife, at which one of the feamen, who was awake, turned about and, feeing them coming, cried out to the relt : but it was too late then; for the moment he cried out, they fired; I mean, the two men, the captainwifely referving his own piece. They had fo well aimed their fhot at the men they knew that one of them was killed on the fpot, and the other very much wound ed; but not being dead, he ftarted up upon his feet, and called eagerly for help to the other; but the captain, ftepping to him, told him it was too late to cry for help; he fhould call upon God to forgive his villainy; and with that word knocked him down with the fock of his mufquet, fo that he never fpoke more: there were three more in the company, and one of them was alfo flightly wounded. By this time I was come; and when they faw their danger, and that it was in vain to refilt, they begged for mercy: the captain told them, he would fpare their lives, if they would give him any affurance of their abhorrence of the treachery they had been guilty of, and would fwear to be faithful to him in recovering the fhip, and afterwards in carrying her back to Jamalca, from whence they came. They gave him all the proteftations of their fincerity that could be deffred, and he was willing to believe them, and fpare their lives; which I was not againft; only

I obliged hint to keep them bound hand and foot while they were upon the ifland.
While this was doing, I fent Friday with the captain's mate to the boat, with orders to fecure her, and bring away the oars and fail, which they did; and, by and by, three ftraggfing men, that were (happily for them) parted from the relt, came back upon hearing the guns fired; and feeing their captain, who before was their prifoner, now their conqueror, they fubmitted to be bound alio, and fo our vittory was compleat.
It now remained, that the captain and I fhould enquire into one another's circumfances : I began firft, and told him my whole hiftory; which he heard with an attention even to amazement; and particularly at the wonderful manner of my being furnifhed with provifions and ammunition ; and, indeed, as my ftory is a whole collection of wonders, it affected him deeply; but when he reflected from thence upon himfelf, and how I feemed to have been preferved there on purpofe to fave his life, the tears ran down his face, and he could not fpeak a word more.
After this communication was at an end, I carried him, and his two men, into my apartments, leading them in juft where I came out, viz. at the top of the houfe; where I refrefthed them with fuch provifions as I had, and fhewed them all the contrivances I had made, during my long, long inhabiting that place.

All I fhewed them, all I faid to them, was perfectly amazing; but, above all, the captain admired my fortification; and how perfectly I had concealed my retreat with a grove of trees, which, having now been planted near twenty years, and the trees grow ing much fafter than in England, was become a little wood, and fo thick, that it was unpaflable in any part of it, but at that one fide, where I had referved my little winding paffage into it: this I told him was my caftle, and my refidence; but that I had a feat in the country, as mott princes have, whither I could retreat upon occafion, and I would fhew him that too another time; but at prefent our bufinefs was to conlider, how to recover the hip: he agreed with me as to that; but told me, he was perfectly at a lofs what meafures
mealures to take; for that there were fill fix and twenty hands on board, who having entered into a curfed confpiracy, by which they had all forfeited their lives to the law, would be hardened in it now by defperation; and would carry it on, knowing that if they were reduced, they fhould be brought to the gallows as foon as they came to England, or to any of the Englith colonies; and that therefore there would be no attacking them with fo fmall a number as we were.
I mufed for fome time upon what he had faid, and found it was a very rational conclufion, and that therefore fomething was to be refolved on very fpeedily, as well to draw the men on board into fome fnare for their furprize, s to prevent their landing upon us, and deftroying us: upon this it pre fently occurred to me, that in a little while, the fhip's crew, wondering what was become of their comrades, and of the boat, would certainly come on fhore in their other boat to fee for hem ; and that then, perhaps, they might come armed, and be too throng for us. This he allowed was rational.

Upon this I told him, the firft thing we had to do was to flave the boat, which lay upon the beach, fo that they might not carry her off; and, taking every thing out of her, leave her to far ufelefs as not to be fit to fwim; accordingly we went on board, took the arms, which were left on board, out of her, and whatever elfe we found there, which was a bottle of brandy, and another of rum, a few bifcuit-cakes, a horn of powder, and a great lump of fugar in a piece of canvas; (the fugar was five or fix pounds ;) all which was very welcome to me, efpecially the brandy and fugar, of which I had had none left for many years.

When we had carried all thefe things on fhore, (the oars, maft, fail, and rudder of the boat, were carried away before, as above) we knocked a great hole in her bottom, that if they had come firong enough to mafter us, yet they could not carry off the boat.
Indeed, it was not much in my thoughts, that we could be capable to recover the fhip; but my view was, that if they went away without the boat, I did not much queltion to make her fit again to carry us away to the Leeward

Illands, and call upon our friends the Spaniards in my way, for I had them fill in my thoughts.
While we were thus preparing our defigns, and had firft, by main ftrength, heaved the boat up upon the beach, fo high, that the tide would not float her off at high-water mark; and, befides; had broken a hole in her bottom, too big to be quickly ftopped, and were fat down mufing what we fhould do, we heard the fhip fire a gun, and faw her make a waft with her ancient, as a fignal for the boat to come on board; but no boat ftirred; and they fired feveral times, making other fignals for the boat.
At laft, when all their fignals and firings proved fruitlefs, and they found the boat did not ftir, we faw them (by the help of our glaffes) hoift another boat out, and row towards the fhore; and we found, as they approached, that there were no lefs than ten men in her, and that they had fire-arms with them.
As the fhip lay almoft two leagues from the fhore, we had a full view of them as they came, and a plain fight of the men, even of their faces; becaufe the tide having fet them a little to the eaft of the other boat, they rowed up under fhore, to come to the fame place, where the other had landed, and where the boat lay.
By this means, I fay, we had a full view of them, and the captain knew the perfons and characters of all the men in the boat; of whom he faid that there were three very honeff fellows; who he was fure were led into this confpiracy by the reft, being overpowered and frighted.

But that for the boatfwain, who, it feems, was the chief officer among them, and all the reft, they were as outrageous as any of the fhip's crew; and were, no doubt, made defperate in their new enterprize: and terribly apprehenfive he was, that they would be too powerful for us.
I fmiled at him, and told him, that men in our circumftances were paf the operations of fear: that feeing almoft every condition that could be, was better than that we were fuppofed to be in, we ought to expect that the confequence, whether death or life would be fure to be a deliverance afked him, what he thought of the circumftances of my life; and whether a delive-
deliverance were not sworth venturing for: 'And where, Sir, faid I, 'is 6 your belief of my being preferved - here on purpofe to fave your life, - which elevated you a little while ago ? \& For my part, there feems to be - but one thing amifs in all the pro6.fpect of it.' - 'What's that ?' fays he. - Why,' faid I, 'tis that, as you - fay there are three org four honelt - fellows among them, which fhould - be fpared; had they been all of the 6 wicked part of the crew, I fhould 6 have thought God's providence had 6 fingled them out to deliver them 6 into your hands; for depend upon it, - every man of them that comes afhore c are our own, and fhall die or live 6 as they behave to us.
As I fpoke this with a raifed voice, and chearful countenance, $I$ found it greatly encouraged him ; fo we fet vigoroully to our bufinefs. We had, upon the firft appearance of the boat's coming from the fhip, confidered of feparating our prifoners, and had, indeed, fecured them effectually.

Two of them, of whom the captain was lefs affured than ordinary, I fent with Friday, and one of the three (delivered men) to my cave, where they were remote enough, and out of danger of being heard or difcovered, or of finding their way out of the woods, if they could have delivered themfelves, Here they left them bound, but gave them provifions, and promifed them, if they continued there quietly, to give them their liberty in a day or two; but that if they attempted their efcape, they fhould be put to death without mercy. They promifed faithfully to bear their confinement with patience, and were very thankful, that they hai fuch good ufage as to have provifions and a light left them; for Friday gave them candles (fuch as we made ourfelves) for their comfort; and tiey did not know but that he food centinel over them at the entrance.
The other prifoners had better ufage; two of them were kept pinioned indeed, becaufe the captain was not free to truf them; but the other two were taken into my fervice upon their captain's recommendation, and upon their folemnly engaging to live and die with as; fo , with them and the three honer men, we were feven men well armed;
and I made no doubt we fhould be able to deal well enough with the ten that were a coming, confidering that the captain had faid there were three of four honeft men among them alfo.

As foon as they got to the place where their other boat lay, they ran their boat into the beach, and came all on fhore, hauling the boat up after them, which I was glad to fee; for I was afraid they would rather have left the boat at. an anchor, fome diftance from the fhore, with fome hands in her to guard her; and fo we flould not be able to feize the boat.
Being on fhore, the firft thing they did, they ran all to the other boat; and it was eafy to fee they were under a great furprize, to find her ftripped, as above, of all that was in her, and a great hole in her bottom.
After they had mufed a while upon this, they fet up two or three great fhouts, hallooing with all their might, to try if they could make their companions hear ; but all was, to no purpofe; then they came all clofe in 2 ring, and fired a volley of their fmall arms, which indeed we heard, and the echoes made the woods ring; but it was all one; thofe in the cave we were fure, could not hear; and thofe in our keeping, though they heard it well enough, yet durft give no anfwer to them.

They were fo aftonified at the fur: prize of this; that, as they told us afterwards, they refolved to go all on board again to their flip, and let them know there, that the men :were all murdered, and the long-boat ttaved; accordingly, they immediately launched the boat again, and got atb of them on board.
The captain wàs terribly amazed, and even confounded at this, believing they would go on board the flip again, and feet fail; gwing their coms rades for loft, and fo he fhould ftill lofe the fhip, which he was in liopes we fhould have recovered: but he was quickly as much frighted the other way.

They had not been long put off with the boat, but we perceived them all coming on fhore again; but with this new meafure in their conduct, which, it feems they confulted together upon; viz. to leave three men in the boat,
and the reft to go on fhore, and go up into the country to look for their fellows.
20 This was a great difappointment to us; for now we were at a lofs what to do; for our feizing thofe feven men on thore would be no advantage to us if we let the boat efcape, becaufe they would then row away to the fhip; and then the reft of them would be fure to sweigh, and fet fail, and fo our recover ing the flip would be loft.
72 However, we had no remedy but to wait and fee what the iffue of things might prefent: the feven men came on thore, and the three who remained in the boat, put her off to a good diftance from the fhore, and came to an anchor to wait for them; fo that it swas impoffible for us to come at them in the boat.
Thofe that came on fhore kept clofe together, marching towards the to of the little hitl, undernwhich my habitation Ilay; and we could fee then plainly, though they could not perceive $\mathrm{us}_{\text {: }}$ l we could have been very glad they would have come nearer to as; fo that we might have fired at them; or that they would have gone farther off, that we saig he have come abroad. But when they were come to the brow of the hilh, whiere theycould fee a great way in the valley and woodis which lay towards the north-reaft part, and where the ifland day loweft, they flouted and hallooed till they were weary; and not caring, it feems, to venture far from the fhore, nor far from one airother, they fat down together under a tree, to confider of it: had they thought fitto have gone to fleep. there, as athe other party of them had done, they had done the job for us; but they were tbofall of apprehenfions of danger to venture to go to fleep, though they could not tell what the danger was they had fo fear neither. The captain made a very juf proepofal to me upowihis confultation of theirs; viz. bhaty perhaps they would all fire a volley again, to endeavour to make their fellows hear, and that we fiould atl falty upon them, juft at the juncture when their pieces were all difcharged, and they would certainly yield, and we fhould have them without bloodfhed; I liked the propofal, provided it was done while we were
near enough to come up to then, before they could load their pieces again.

But this event did not happen, and we lay ftill a long time, very irrefolute what courfe to take : at length I told them, there would be nothing to be done, in my opinion, till night ; and then, if they did not return to the boat, perhaps we might find a way to get between them and the flore, and fo might ufe fone fratagem with them in the boat to get them on fhore. 'We waited a great while, though very impatient, for their removing, and were very uneafy; when, after lons confultations, we faw them fart all up, and march down towards the fea. It feems, they hed fuch dreadful apprehenfions upon them of the danger of the place, that they refolved to go on board the fhip again, give their companions over for loft, and fo go on with their intended voyage with the thip.
As foon as I perceived them go to wards the flore, I imagined it to be as it really was; that they had given over their fearch, and were for going back again: and the captain, as foon as I told him my thoughts, was ready to fink at the apprebenfions of it; but I prefently thought of a ftratagem to fetch them back hgain, and which anfwered my end to a tittle.
I ordered Friday and the Captain's mate to go over the little creek weftward, towards the place where the favages came on fhore when Friday was refcued; ahd as foon as they came to a little rifing ground, at about half a mile's diftance, I bade them halloo as foud as they could, and wait till they found the feamen heard them; that as foon as ever they heard the feamen anfwer them, they fhould return it again, and then keeping out of fight, take a round always anfwering when the other hallooed, to draw them as far into the illand, and among the woods, as poffrble; and then wheel about again to me; by fuch ways as I directed.
They were juft going into the boat, when Friday and the mate hallooed, and they prefently heard them, and anfwering, run along the fhore weftward, towards the voice they heard; when they were prefently Itopped by the creek, where the water being up,
they could not get over, and called fon the boat to come up, and fet them over, as indeed $I$ expected.
When they had fet themfelves over; I obferved that the boat being gone up a good way into the creek, and as it were in a härbour within the land, they took one of the three men out of her to go along with them, and left only two in the boat, having fattened her to the ftump of a little tree on the fhore.
This was what I wifhed for; and immediately leaving. Friday and the captain's mate to their bufinefs, I took the reft with me, and croffing the creek out of their fight, we furprized the two men before they were aware, one of them lying on fhore, and the other being in the boat; the fellow on fhore was between fleeping and waking, and going to ftart up, the captain, who was toremolt, ran in upon him, and knocked him down, and then cailed out to him in the boat to yield, or he was a dead man.
There needed very few arguments to perfuade a fingle man to yield, when he faw five men upon him, and his comrade knocked down; befides, this was, it feems, one of the three who were not fo hearty in the mutiny as the reft of the crew, and therefore was eafily perfuaded, not only to yield, but afterwards to join very fincerely with us.
In the mean time, Friday and the captain's mate fo well managed their bufinefs with the reft, that they drew them, by hallooing and anfwering, from one hill to another, and from one wood to another, till they not only heartily tired them, but left them where they were very fure they could not reach back to the boat before it was dark; and indeed they were heartily tired themfelves alfo by the time they came back to us.
We had nothing now to do but to watch for them in the dark, and to fall upon them, fo as to make fure work with them.
It was feveral hours after Friday came back to me, before they came back to their boat; and we could hear the foremott of them, long before they came quite up, calling to thofe behind to come along, and could alfo hear -them anfwer, and complain how lame and tired they were, and not being able
to come any fafter, which was very welcome news to us.
At length they came up to the boat; but it is impoffible to exprefs their confufion, when they found the boat faft aground in the creek, the tide ebbed out, and their two men gone; we could hear them call to one another in a moft lamentable manner, telling one another they were gotten into an inchanted ifland; that either there were inhabitants in it, and they fhould all be murdered; or elfe there were devils or fpirits in it, and they fhould be all carried away and devoured.
They hallooed again, and called their two comrades by their names a great many times, but no anfwer. After fome time, we could fee them, by the little light there was, run about, wringing their hands, like men in defpair; and that fometimes they would go and fit down in the boat to reff themfelves, then come a/hore, and walk about again, and fo the fame thing over again.
My men would fain have had me given them leave to fall upon them at once in the dark; but I was willing to take then at fome advantage, fo to fpare them, and kill as few of them as I could; and efpecially I was unwilling to hazard the killing any of our men, knowing the other were very weH armed : I refolved to wait to fee if they did not feparate; and therefore, to make fure of them, I drew my ambufcade nearer ; and ordered Friday and the captain to oreep upon their hands and feet as clofe, to the ground as they could, that they might not be difcovered, and get as near them as they could poffibly, before they offered to fire.
They had not been long in that pofture, but that the boatfiwain, who was the principal ringteader of the mutiny, and had now thewn himfelf the moft dejected and difpirited of all the reft, came walking towards them with two more of their crew ; the captain was fo eager, at having the principal rogue fo much in his power, that he could hardly have patience to let him come fo near as to be fure of him; for they only heard his tongue before: but when they came nearer, the captain and Friday, ftarting up on theirfeet, let fly at them.
The boatfwain was killed upon the
fpot; the next man was fhot in the body, and fell juft by him, though he did not die till an hour or two after; and the third run for it.

At the hoife of the fire, I immediateIy advanced with my, whole army, which was now eight men, viz. myfelt generaliffimo; Friday my lieutenantgeneral ; the captain and his two men ; and the three prifoners of war, whom he had trufted with arms.

We came upon them indeed in the dark, fo that they could not fee our number; and I made the man they had left in the boat, who was nuw one of us, to call them by name, to try if I could bring them to a parley, and fo might perhaps.reduce them ta terms; which fell out jult as we deired: for indeed it was eafy to think, as a their condition then was, they would be very willing to capitulate; fo he calls out, as loud as he could, to one of them, © Tom Smith, Toin Smith!' Tom Smith anfwered immediately, "Who's "that? Robinfon?". For it feems he knew his voice. The other anfwered, -Ay, ay; for God's fake, Tom - Smith, throw down your arms, and yield, or you are all dead men this 6 moment.

- Who muft we yield to? Where ' are they?' fays Smith again. 'Here 'they are,' fays he; 'here is our cap6 tain and fifty men with him; have - been hunting you this two hours; ' the boatfwain is killed, Will Fry 6 is wounded, and I am a prifoner; - and if you do not yield, you are all - loft.
'Will they give us quarter then ?' fays Fom Smith, 's and we will yield. - Ill go and afk, if you promife to - yield,' fays Robinfon. So he afked the captain, and the captain himfelf then calls out: 6 You, Smith; you - know my voice; if you lay down 6 your arms immediately and fubmit, - you fhall have your lives, all but 'Will Avkins.'
Upon this Will Atkins cried out, - For God's fake, captain, give me 6 quarter: What have I done? They ' have been all as bad as I!' which, by the way, was not true neither; for it feems, this Will Atkins was the filt man that slaid hold of the captain, when they firit mutinied, and ufed him birbaroully, in tying his hands, and giving him injurious language. How -
ever, the captain told him he murt lay, down his arms at difcretion, and truft to the governor's mercy; by which he meant me, for they all called me governor.
In a word, they all daid down their arms, and begged their lives $;$ and $I$ fent the man that had parleyed with them, and two more, who bound them all; and then my great army of fifty men, which, particularly with thofe three, were all but eight, came up and feized upon them all, and upon their boat, only that I kept myfelf and one more out of fight, for reafons of ftate.

Our next work was to repair the boat, and to think of feizing the fhip; and as for the captain, now he had leifure to parley with them, he expoftulated with them upon the villainy of their practices with him, and at length upon the farther wickednefs of their defign; and how certainly it muft bring them to mifery and diftrefs in the end, and perhaps to the gallows.
They all appeared very penitent, and begged hard for their lives. As for that, he told them they were none of his prifoners, but the commander's of the inland; that they thought they had fet him on fhore in a barren uninhabited ifland; but it had pleafed God fo to direct them, that the ifland was inhabited, and that the governor was an Englifhman; that he might hang them all there if he pleafed; but as he had given them all quarter, he fup pofed he would fend them to England pored he woudd end them to England,
to be dealt with there, as juftice required, except Arkins, whom he was commanded by the governor to advife to prepare for death, for that he would be hanged in the morning.
Though this was all a fiction of his own, yet it hay it's defred effect Atkins fell upon his knees ta beg the captain to intercede with the governor for his life; and all the reft begged of him, for God's fake, that they might not be fent to England.

It now occurred to me, that the time of our deliverance was come, and that it would be a moft eafy thing to bring thefe fellows in, to be hearty in getting poffeffion of the fhip; fo I retired in the dark from them, that they might not fee what kind of a gavernor they had, and called the cap-
tain to me; when $I$ called, as at a own him for a father to them as long good diftance, one of the men was as they lived. ordered to fpeak again, and fay to the ordered to fpeak again, and lay to the captain, 'Captain, the commander captain replied, TTell his excellency -I am juit a coming. This more perfeetly amufed them; and they all believed, that the commander was juft by with his fifty men.
Upon the captain's coming to me, I told him my project for feizing the fhip; which he liked of wonderfully well, and relolved to put it in execution the next morning.
But, in order to execute it with more art, and to be fecure of fuccefs, I told him we mult divide the prifoners, and that he fhould go and take Atkins, and two more of the worlt of them, and fend them pinioned to the cave where the others lay. This was committed to Friday, and the two men who came on fhore with the captain.
They conveyed them to the cave, as to a prifon; and it was indeed a difmal place, efpecially to men in their condition.
The other I ordered to my bower, as I called it, of which I have given a full defcription; and as it was fenced in, and they pinioned, the place was fecure enough, confidering they were upon their behaviour.

To thefe in the morning I fent the captain, who was to enter into a parley with them; in a word, to try them, and tell me whether be thought they might be trufted or no to go on board and furprize the fhip. He talked to them of the injury done him, of the condition they were brought to; and that though the governor had given them quarter for their lives, as to the prefent action, yet that if they were ient to England, they would all be hanged in chains to be fure; but that if they would join in fuch an attempt as to recover the fhip, he would have the governor's engagement for their pardon.
Any one may guefs how readily fuch a propofal would be accepted by men in their condition; they fell down on their knees to the captain, and promifed, with the deepeft imprecations, that they would be faithful to him to the lalt drop, and that they fhould owe their lives to him, and would go with him all over the world; that they would

6 Well, fays the cantain 6 muft go and tell the governor what you - fay, and fee what I can do to bring 6. him to content to it.' So he broughit me an account of the temper he found them in; and that he verily believed they would be faithful.
However, that we might be very fe. cure, I told him he flould go back again, and chufe out five of them, and tell them, that they fhould fee that they did not want men; but he would take out thofe five to be his affittants, and that the governor would keep the other two, and the three that were fent prifoners to the caltle, (my cave) as holtages, for the fidelity of thofe five; and that if they proved unfaithful in the execution, the five holtages thould be hanged in chains alive upon the thore.
This looked fevere, and convinced them that the governor was in earnef: however, they had no way left them but to accept it; and it was now the bulinefs of the prifoners, as much as of the captain, to perfuade the other five to do their duty.
Our ftrength was now thus orlered for the expedition. 1. The captain, his mate, and paffenger. 2. Then the two prifoners of the firit gang, to whom, having their characters from the captain, I had given their liberty, and trufted them with arms. 3. The other two whom I kept fill now in my bower pinioned; but, upon the captain's motion, had now releafed. 4 Thefe five releafed at lait. So that they were twelve in all, befides five we kept prifoners in the cave for hoftages.
I afked the captain if he was willing to venture with thefe hands on buard the Mip: for, as for me and my man Friday, I did not think it was proper for us to ftir, having leven men left behind; and it was employment enough for us to keep them afunder, and fupply them with victuals.
As to the five in the cave, I refolved to keep them fatt ; but Friday went twice a day to them, to fupply them with neceffaries; and I made the other two carry provifions to a certain dittance, where Friday was to take it.

When I fhewed myfelf to the two hoftages, it was with the captain, who told them, i was the perion the go-
vernor had ordered to look after them, and that it was the governor's pleafure they fhould not ftir any where but by my direction; that if they did, they fhould be fetched into the caftle, and be laid in irons; fo that as we never fuffered them to lee me as governor, fo I now appeared as another perfon, and fpoke of the governor, the garrifon, the caftle, and the like, upon all occafions.

The captain now had no difficulty before him, but to furnith his two boats, ftop the breach of one, and man them. He made his pafienger captain of one, with four othermen ; and himfelf, his mate, and five more, went in the other : and they contrived their bufinefs very well; for they came up to the fhip about midnight. As foon as they came within call of the flip, he made Robinfon hail them, and tell them he had brought off the men and the boat, but that it was a long time before they had found them; and the like: holding them in a chat, till they came to the fhip's fide; when the captain and the mate entering firft with their arms, immediately knocked down the fecond mate and carpenter with the butt-end of their mufquets, being very faithfully feconded by their men; they fecured all the reft that were upon the main and quarter-decks, and began to faften the hatches, to keep them down who were below, when the other boat, and their men, entering at the fore-chains, fecured the forecaftle of the fhip, and the fkuttle which went down into the cook-room, making three men they found there prifoners.

When this was done, and all fafe upon the deck, the captain ordered the mate with three men to break into the round-houfe, where the new rebel captain lay, and having taken the alarm, was gotten up, and with two men and a boy, had gotten fire-arms in their hands; and when the mate with a crow fplit open the door, the new captain and his men fired boldly among them, and wounded the mate with a mufquet-ball, which broke his arm, and wounded two more of the men, killed nobody.
The mate, calling for help, wuhed, nowever, in to the round-houfe, woundd as he was, and with his piftol fhot be new captain through the head, he buliets entering at his mouth, and
came out again behind one of his ears; fo that he never spoke a word; upon which the reft yielded, and the thip was taken effectually, without any more lives loft.
As foon as the fhip was thus fecured, the captain ordered feven guns to be fired, which was the fignal agreed upon with me, to give me notice of his fuccefs; which you may be fure I was. very glad to hear, having fat watching upon the fhore for it till near two of the clock in the morning.
Having thus heard the fignal plainly, I laid me down; and it having been a day of great fatigue to me, I. flept very found, till I was fomething furprized with the noife of a gun ; and prefently flarting up, I heard a man call me by the name of 'Governor ! 'Governor!' and prefently I knew the captain's voice; when climbing up to the top of the hill, there he food, and pointing to the mip, he embraced me in his arms; 'My dear friend and ' deliverer,' fays he, 'there's your - fhip, for the is all yours, and fo are - we, and all that belong to her.' caft my eyes to the fhip, and there fhe rode within a little more than half a mile of the fhore; for they had weighed her anchor as foon as they were mafters of her; and the weather being fair, had brought her to an ant chor juft againft the mouth of a little creek; and the tide being up, the capt tain had brought the pinnace in near the place where I firlt landed my rafts; and fo landed juft at my door.
I was, at firf, ready to fink down with the furprize: for I faw my deliverance indeed vifibly put into my hands, all things eafy, and a large fhip juft ready to carry me away whither I pleafed to go. At firft, for fome time, I was not able to anfwer one word; but as he had taken me in his arms, I held faft by him, or I fhould have fallen to the ground.
He perceived the furprize, and im mediately pulled a bottle out of his pocket, and gave me a dram of cordial, which he had brought on purpofe for me. After I had drank it, I lat down upon the ground; and though it brought me to myfelf, yet it was a good while before I could fpeak a word to him.
All this while the poor man was in as great an extafy as $I$, only not un-
der any furprize, as I was; and he faid a thoufand kind tender things to me, to compofe and bring me to inyfelf; but fuch was the flood of joy in my breaft, that it put all my ipirits into confufion; at laft it broke into tears, and in a little while after I recovered my feeech.
Then I took my turn, and embraced him as my deliverer; and we rejoiced together. I told him, I looked upon him as a man fent from heaven to defiver me, and that the whole tranfaction feemed to be a chain of wonders; that fuch things as thefe were the teftimonies we had of a fecret hand of Providence governing the world, and an evidence, that the eyes of an Infinite Power could fearch into the remoteft corner of the world, and fend help to the miferable whenever he pleafed.

I forgot not to lift up my heart in thankfulnefs to Heaven: and what heart could forbear to blefs him, who thad not only in a miraculous manner provided for one in fuch a wildernel's, and in fuch a defolate condition, but from whom every deliverance muft always be acknowledged to proceed!
When we had talked awhile, the captain told me, he had brought me fome little refrefliments, fuch as the flip afforded, and fach as the wretches, who had been fo long his mafters, had not plundered him of. Upon this he cafled aloud to the boat, and bid his men bring the things afhore that were for the governor; and indeed it was a prefent, as if I had been one, not that was to be carried along with them, but as if I had been to dwell upon the ifland fill, and they were to go without me.
Firft, he had brought me a cafe of bottles full of excellent cordial waters, fix large bottles of Madeira wine, (the bottles held two quarts apiece;) two pounds of excellent good tobacco, twelve good pieces of the गhip's beef, and fix pieces of pork, with a bag of peas, and about an hundred weight of
bifcuit.

He brought me alfo a box of fugar, a box of flour, a bag full of lemons, and two bottles of lime-juice; and abundance of other things: but befides thefe, and what was a thoufand times more ufeful to me, he brought
me fix clean new fhirts, fix very good neckcloths, two pair of gloves, one pair of fhoes, a hat, and one pair of ftockings, and a very good fuit of cloaths of his own, which had been worn but very little; in a word, he cloathed me from head to foot.
It was a very kind and agreeable prefent, as any one may imagine, to one in my circumftances; but never was any thing in the world of that kind fo unpleafant, aukward, and uneafy, as it was to me to wear fuch cloaths at their firft putting on.

After thefe ceremonies paft, and after all his good things were brought into my little apartment, we began to confult what was to be done with the prifoners we had; for it was worth confidering whether we might venture to take them away with us or no, efpecially two of them, whom we knew to be incorrigible and refractory to the laft degree; and the captain faid, the knew they were fuch rogues, that there was no obliging them; and if he did carry them away, it mult be in irons, as malefactors, to be delivered over to juftice at the firft Englifh colony he could come at. And I found that the captain himfelf was very anxious about it.

Upon this, I told him, that if lie defired it, I durt undertake to bring the two men he fpoke of, to make it their own requeft that he fhould leave them upon the ifland. I I Mould be ' very glad of that,' fays the captain, with all my heart.'

- Well,' faid X , ' I will fena for So I I caufed talk with them for you: So I caufed Friday and the two hoftages, for they were now difcharged, their comrades having performed their promife; I fay, I cauled them to go to the cave, and bring up the five men, pinioned as they were, to the bower and keep them there till I came.

After fome time, I came thither drefled in my new habit; and now $I$ was called governor again. Being all met, and the captain with me, I caufed the men to be brought before me, and I told thein I had had a full account of their villainous behaviour to the captain, and how they had run away with the fhip, and were preparing to commit farther robberies; but that Providence had enfnared them in their
own ways, and that they were fallen into the pit which they had digged for others.

I let them know, that by my direction the fhip had been feized, that fhe lay now in the road, and they might fee by and by, that their new captain had received the reward of his villainy, for that they might fee him hanging at the yard-arm.
That as to them, I wanted to know what they had to fay, why I fhould not execute them as pirates taken in the fact, as by my commiffion they could not doubt I had authority to do.

One of them anfwered in the name of the relt, that they had nothing to fay but this, that when they were taken, the captain promifed them their lives, and they humbly implored my mercy. But I told them, I knew not what mercy to fhew them ; for, as for myfelf, I had refolved to quit the ifland with all my men, and had taken paffage with the captain to go for England: and as for the captain, he could not carry them to England, other than as prifoners in rons, to be tried for mutiny, and running away with the fhip; the confequence of which, they muft needs know, would be the gallows; fo that I could not rell which was beft for them, unlefs they had a mind to take fheir fate in the ifland; if they defired that, I did not care, as I had liberty to leave it: I had fome inclination to give them their lives, if they thought they could fhift on fhore. They feemed very shankful for it; faid they would much xather venture to ftay there, than to be carried to England to be hanged; $10 I$ left them on that iffue.
However, the captain feemed tomake fome difficulty of it, as if he durft not leave them there : upon this I feemed a little angry with the captain, and told him, that they were my prifoners, not his; and that feeing I had offered them fo much favour, I would be as good as my word; and that if he did not think fit to confent to it, I would fet them at liberty as I found them and if he did not like that, he migh take them again, if he could catch them.

Upon this they appeared very thankful; and I accordingly fet them at liberty, and bade thein retire into the woods, to the place whetice tliey canre, and I
would leave them fome fire-arms, forme ammunition, and fome directions hour they fhould live very well, if they thought fit.
Upon this, I prepared to gro on board the fhip; but told the captain, that I would ftay that night to prepare my things, and defired him to go on board in the mean time, and keep all right in the fhip, and fend the boat on fhore the next day for me; ordering him in the mean time, to caufe the new captain, who was killed, to be hanged at the yard-arm, that thefe men might fee him.
When the captain was gone, I fent for the men up to my apartment, and entered ferioufly into difcourfe with them of their circumftances: I told them, I thought they had made a right choice; that if the captain carried them away, they would certainly be hanged: I fhewed them their captain hanging at the yard-arm of the fhip, and told them they had nothing lefs to expect.

When they had all declared their willingnefs to ftay, I then told them I would let them into the fory of my living there, and put them into the way of making it eafy to them: accordingly I gave them the whole hiftory of the place, and of my coming to it ; fhewed them my fortifications; the way I made my bread, planted my corn, cured my grapes; and, in a word, all that was neceffary to make them eafy: I told them the ftory alfo of the fixteen Spaniards that were to be expected; for whom I left a letter, and made them promife to treat them in common with themfelves.

I left them my fire-arms; viz. five mufquets, three fowling-pieces, and three fwords. I had about a barrel of powder left; for after the firlt year or two I ufed but little, and wafted none. I gave them a defcription of the way I managed the goats, and directions to milk and fatten them, to make boêk butter and cheefe.
In a word, I gave them every part of my own frory; and I told them, I would prevail with the captain to leave them two barrels of gun-powder more, and fome garden-feed, which I told them I would have been very glad of; alfo I gave them the bag of peafe which the captain had brought me to eat, and bade them be fure to fow and increafe them.

Having

Having done all this, I left them the next day, and went on board the fhip. We prepared immediately to fail, but did not weigh that night. The but did norning early, two of the five next morning caming to the hip's fide, and, making a moit lamentable complaint of the other three, begged to be taken into the hip, for God's fake, for they fhould be murdered; and begred the captain to take them on board, though he hanged theim immediately.
Upon this the captain pretended to have no power without me; but after fome difficulty, and after their folemn promifes of amendment, they were taken on board, and were fome time after foundly whipped and pickled; after which they proved very honeft and quiet fellows.
Some time after this, I went with the boat on fhore, the tide being up, with the things promifed to the men, to which the captain, at my intercetfon caund their chefts and cloaths fion, calded which they took, and to be added, which the were very thankful for: I alfo encouraged them, by telling them, that if it lay in my way to fend a veflel to tak them in, I woutd not forget them.

When I took leave of this ifland, I carried on board for reliques the great goat's 1 kin cap I had made, my umbrella, and one of my parrots; alio I forgot not to take the money I formerly mentioned, which had lain by me fo long ufelefs, that it was grown rufty, or tarnifhed, and could hardly pais for filver, till it had been a little rubbed and handled; and alfo the money I found in the wreck of the Spanifi fhip.
And thus I left the ifland the nineteenth of December, as I found by the thip's account, in the year 2686, after I had been upon it eight and twenty years, two months, and nineteen days ; being delivered from the fecond captivity the fame day of the month that I firt made my efrape in the barco-longo, from among the Moors of Sallee.
In this veffel, after a long voyage, I arrived in England the eleventh of June, in the year 1687, having been. thirty and five years abfent.
When I came to England, I was a perfect ftranger to all the world, as if I had never beep known there:-my
benefactor, and faithful fteward, whom I had left in truft with my money, was alive, but had had great misfortunes in the world, was become a widow the fecond time, and very low in the world. I made her eafy as to what fhe owed me, affuring her, I would give her no trouble; but on the contrary in cratitude to her former car and failhfulnefs to me, relieved her firte fock would afford her as my fittle ftock would afford, which at that time would indeed allow me to do but little for her; but I affured her I would never forget her former kindnefs' to me; nor did I forget her, when I had fufficient to help her, as thall be obferved in it's place.
I went down afterwards into York flire; but my father was dead, and my mother, and all the family extinct; except that I found two filters, and two of the children of one of my brothers, and as I had been long ago ive for dead there had been no piovicu forde for me that in a word, I found nothing to relieve or affilt me; and that little money I had, would not do much for me, as to fettling in the world.
I met with one piece of gratitude indeed which I did not expeet; and inceed, whis whe fer of the mip whom I had fo happily delivered, and by the fame means laved the fip and cargo, having given a very liandfome account to the owners, of the manner how I had faved the lives of the men and the fip, they invited me to meet them and fome other merchants concerned, and all eosether made me a very, and all togeliment the very handrome compliment upon tha hindred pounds freiring
But after making feveral reflections pon the circumitances of my life, and Now little way this would go toward fettling me in the world, I yefolved to to to Lifbon, and fee if I might not come by fome information of the fate of my plantation in the Brazils, and what was become of my partner, who tind reaton to fuppofe had fome years 1 had rearon to huppor for dead.
With this view I took mipping for Lifbon wh 1 in por Won, where 1 an 1 fied in Aprl lowing; my man Friday accompany ing me very honeltly in all theie ram blinos, and proving a molt faithful fervant upon all occafions.
When I came to Lirbon, I found
out by enquiry, and to my particular fatisfaction, my old friend the captain of the thip, who firf took me up at Sea, off the thore of Africa: he was now grown old, and hadleft off the fea having put his fon, who was far from a young man, into his Thip; and who fill ufed the Brazil trade. The old man did not know me; and, indeed, I hardly knew him; but I foon brought myfelf to his remembrance, when told him who I was.
After fome paffionate expreffions of our old acquaintance, I enquired, you may be fure, after my plantation, and my partner : the old man told me, he had not been in the Brazils for about nine years; but that he could affure me, that when he came away, my partner was living, but the truftees, whom I had joined with him to take cognizance of my part, were both dead; that, however, he believed that I would have a very good account of the improvement of the plantation; for that, upon the general belief of my being caft away and drowned, my trultees had given in the account of the produce of my part of the plantation to the Procurator Fifcal; who had appropriated it, in cafe I never came to claim it, one third to the king, and two thirds to the monaftery of St. Auguftine, to be expended for the benefit of the poor, and for the converfion of the Indians to the Catholick faith; but that if I appeared, of any one for me, to claim the inheritanff, it would be reftored; only that the improvement, or annual produéion, being diftributed to charitable ufes, could not be reftored; but he affured me, that the fteward of the king's revenue, (from lands) and the provedore, or feward of the monaftery, had taken great care all along, that the incumbent, that is to fay, my partner, gave every year a faithfut account of the produce, of which they received duly my moiety. I afked him, if he knew to what height of improyement he had brought the plantation; and whether he thought it might be worth lookino afterght whether, on my going thither, I fhould meet with no obftruction to my poffeflingmyjuft right in the moiety.
He told me, he could not tell exactly 40 what degree the plantation was improved; but this he knew, that my partner was grown exceeding rich up-
on the enjoying but one half of it ; and that, to the beft of his remembrance he had heard, that the king's third of my part, which was, it feems, granted away to fome other monaftery, or religious houfe, amounted to above two hundred moidores a year; that, as to my being reftored to a quiet poffeffion of it, there was no queftion to be made of that, my partner being alive to witnefs my title, and my name being alfo inrolled in the regifter of he country. Alfo he told me, that the furvivors of my two trultees were very fair, honeft people, and very wealthy; and he believed I would not only have their affiftance for putting me in poffeffion, but would find a very confiderable fum of money in their hands, for my account, being the produce of the farm while their fathers held the truft, and before it was given up, as above, which, as he remembered, was about twelve years.
I fhewed myfelf a little concerned and unealy at this account, and enquired of the old captain, how it came to pals, that the truftees fhould thus difpofe of my effects, when that I had made my will, and had made him, the Portugueze captain, my
univerfal heir, \&c.
He told me, that was true; bue that, as there was no proof of my being.dead, he could not act as executor, until fome certain account fhould come of my death; and that, befides, he was not willing to intermeddle with a thing fo remote: that it was true, he had regiftered my will, and put in his claim; and could he have given any account of my being dead given any would have acted by procur alive, he taken pofieflion of the ingenio, (fo they called the fugar-houfe) and had given his fon, who was now at the Brazils, order to do it.
'But,' fays the old man, 'I have. 6 one piece of news to tell you, which 6 perhaps may not be fo acceptable to you as the reft; and that is, that beworing you were Ioft, and all the world befieving fo alfo, your part6 ner and truftees did offer to accourt 6 to me in your name, for fix or eight

- of the firft years of profits, which I
- received; but there being at that 6 time great difburfements for increafing 6 the works, building an ingenio, and 6 buyihg flaves, it did not amount to
- near fo much as afterwards it pro-- duced. However,' fays the old man, - I fhall give you a true account of - I have difpofed of it.'

After a few days farther conference with this ancient friend, he brought me an account of the fix firft years income of my plantation, figned by my partner, and the merchant's truftees, being always delived in goods; viz. tobacco in rolls, and fugar in chefts, thelaffes, \&c. which is befides 1 um , melafle of a fugar-work; and the confequence found by this account, that every year the income confiderably increafed; but, as above, the difburfement being large, the fum at firft was fmall : how large, the fum man let me fee, that he ever, the old mour hundred and was debty moidores of gold, befides fixty chefts of fugar, and fifteen double rolls of tobacco, which were loft in his fhip, he having been fhipwrecked com ing home to Lirbon, about eleven years after my leaving the place.

The good man then began to complain of his misfortunes, and how he had been obliged to make ufe of my money to recover his loffes, and buy him a mald friend,' fays he, ' you fhall 6 my old friend, lay in your neceffity;
6 and as foon as my fon 'returns, you
6 fhall be fully fatisfied.
Upon this he pulls out an old pouch, and gives me two hundred Portugal moidores in gold; and giving me the writings of his title to the fhip which his fon was gone to the Brazils in, of which he was a quarter-part owner, and his fon another, he puts them both in my hands for fecurity of the reft.

I was too much moved with the honefty and kindnefs of the poor man, to be able to bear this ; and remembering what he had done for me; how he had taken me up at fea, and how generoully he had ufed me on all occafions, and particularly, how fincere a friend he was now to me, I could hardly refrain weeping at what he laid to me: therefore, firft I anked him if his circumftances admitted him to pare ro much money at that time, and if it would not ftraiten him. He told me he could not fay but it might fruaiten him a little; but, however, it more than he.
Every thing the good man faid was Every thection, and I could hardly refrain from tears while he fpoke. In refrain, I took one hundred of the moifhort, I took one hundren and ink to dores, and called for a pen and ink $I$ give him a receipt for them; then 1 returned him the reft, and told him, if ever I had poffeffion of the plantation, I would return the other to him alfo, as indeed I afterwards did; and alfo, as indeed 1 bill of fale of his part that, as to the bill fould not take it in his fon's mip, I would not take it by any means; but that if I wanted the money, I found he was honeit enough to pay me; and if I did not, but came to receive what he gave me reaf to reafon to expect, I wou
penny more from him.
When this was paffed, the old man in a method to make my claim to my plantation. I told him, I thought to plantation. it myfelf: he faid I might go over if I pleafed; but that if I do fo if I pleafed; but that if 1 did not, there were ways enough to fecure my right, and immediately to appropriate the profits to my ufe ; and as there were fhips in the river of and as there juft ready to go away to BraLifbon, juft ready onter my name in a zil, he made me enter my name in a publick regifter, with his affidavit, arfirming upon oath that I was alive, and that I was the fame perfon who took up the land for the planting the faid plantation at firft.
This being regularly attefted by a This being reguration affixed; he notary, and a to fend it with a letter of his writing, to a merchant of his acquaintance at the place; and then propofed my faying with him till an account came of the return.
Never any thing was more honourble than the proceedings upon this procuration; for in lefs than feven months I received a large packet from the furvivors of my truitees, the merchants, for whofe account I went to chant, fore which were the lea, in letters and papers inclofed.

Firft, There was the account curent of the produce of my farm, or plantation, from the year when thei flathers had balanced with my old Portugal captain, being for fix years; the balance appeared to be 1174 moidores in my favour.

Secondly,

## ROBINSON CRUSOE.

Secondly, There was the account of four years more while they kept the effects in their hands, before the government claimed the adminiftration, as being the effiects of a perfon not to be found, which they call civil death; and the balance of this, the value of the plantation, increafing, amounted to cruifadoes which made three thoufand two hundred and forty one moidores.

Thirdly, There was the prior of the Auguftines account, who had received the profits for above fourteen years; but not being able to account for what was difpofed to the hofpital very honeftly declared he had 872 moidores not diftributed, which he acknowledged to my account. As to the king's part, that refunded nothing.
There was alfo a letter of my part ner's; congratulating me very affectionately upon my being alive; giving me an account how the eftate was improved, and what it produced a year, with a particular of the number of fquares or acres that it contained; how planted; how many flaves there were upon it; and making two and twenty eroffes for bleffings, told me, he had faid fo many Ave Maria's to thank the Blefied Virgin that I was alive; inviting me very paffionately to come over and take poffeffion of my own; and in the mean time to give him orders to whom he fhould deliver my effects, if I did not come myfelf; concluding with an hearty tender of his friendihip, and that of his family; and fent me, as a prefent, feven fine leopards 1 kins, which he had, it feems, received from Africa by fome other fhip which he had fent thither, and who, it feems, had made a better voyage than I. He fent me alfo five chefts of excellent -fweetmeats; and an hundred pieces of gold uncoined, not quite fo large as moidores.
By the fame fleet my two merchanttruftees fhipped me one thoufand two hundred chefts of fugar, eight hundred rolls of tobacco, and the reft of the whole account in gold.
I might well fay now, indeed, that the latter end of Job was better than the beginning. It is impoffible to exprefs the flutterings of my very heart, when I looked over thefe letters, and efpecially when I found all my wealth
about me; for as the Brazil hips canse all in fleets, the fame hips which brought my letter's brought my goods and the effects were fafe in the Tagus before the letter came to my hand: in a word, I turned pale, and grew fick and had not the old man run and fetched me a cordial, I believe the fudden furprize of joy bad overfet nature, and I had died upon the fpot.

Nay, after that, I continued very ill, and was fo fome bours, till a phyfician being fent for, and fomething of the real caufe of my illnefs being known, he ordered me to be let blood; after which I had relief, and grew well ; but I verily believe, if it had not been eafed by the vent given in that manner to the firits, 1 fhould have died.

I was now mafter, all on a fudden, of above 50,0001 . Aterling in money, and had an eftate, as I might well call it, in the Brazils, of above a thoufand pounds a year, as fure as an eftate of lands in England; and, in a word, I was in a condition which I fcarce knew how to underftand, or how to compofe myfelf for the enjoyment of.
The firt thing I did, was to recompenfe my original benefactor, my good old captain, who had been firt charitable to me in my diffrefs, kind to me in the beginning, and honeft to me at the end. I fhewed him all that was fent me; I told him that, next to the Providence of Heaven, which difpofes all things, it was owing to him; and that it now lay in me to reward him, which I would do an hundred-fold. So I firf returned to him the hundred moidores $I$ had received of him ; then I fent for a notary, and caufed him to draw up a general releafe or difcharge for the four hundred and feventy moldores which he had acknowledged he oved me, in the fulleft and firmert manner poflible; after which, I caufed a procuration to be drawn, impowering him to be my receiver of the annual profits of my plantation, and appointing my partner to account, to him, and make the returns by the ufual fleets to him in my name; and a claufe in the end, being a grant of one hundred moidores a year to him during his life, out of the effects; and fifty moidores a year to his fon after
him, for his life. And thus I requited my old man. I was now to cont, and what to do fteer my courfe next, novidence had with the eftate that Providence indeed, thus put into my hands; a had now, Ithad I had in my filent fate of life in the ifland, where I wanted nothing but what I had, and had nothing but what I wanted; whereas I had now a great charge upon me, and my bufinefs was how to fecure it. I had never a cave to hide my money in, or a place where it might lie without lock or key, it it grew mouldy and tarnifhed before any body would meddle with it: on the contrary, I knew not where to put it, or whom to trate was old patron, the captain, indeed, was hor
In the next place, my intereft in the Brazils feemed to fummon me thither; but now I could not tell how to think of going thither till I had iettled my affairs, and left my effects in fome fafe hands behind me. At firft I thought of my old friend the widow, who I knew was honeft, and would be juft to me; but then fhe was in years, and but poor, and for aught I knew, might be in debt; fo that, in a word, I had no way but to go back to England myfeif, and take my effects with me.

I was fome months, however, before I refolved upon this; and therefore as I had rewarded the old captain fully, and to ratisfaction, wo I began to my former benefactor; think of my poor widow, whole hid band had been my firlt benefactor, and he, while it was in her power, my faithful fteward and inftructor: 10 the firft thing I did, I got a merchant in Lifbon to write to his correfpondent in London, not only to pay a bill, but to go find her out, and carly her in money a hundred pounds from me, and to talk with her, and comfort her in her poverty, by telling her, fhe fhould, if I lived, have a farther fupply. A the fame time I fent my two filters in the country, each of them, a hundred pounds, they being, though no in want, yet not in very good circumfances ; one having been married and left a widow, and the other having a
hufband not fo kind to her as he fhould be.

But among all my relations or acquaintances 1 could not yet pitch upon one, to whom I durft commit the grofs of my ftock, that I might go away to the Brazils, and leave things fate behind me, and this greatiy perplexed me.
I had once a mind to have gone to the Brazils, and have fettled mylelf there; for I was, as it were, naturalized to the place; but I had fome little fcruple in my mind about religion, which infenfibly drew me back, of which I thall fay more prefently. However, it was not religion that kept me from going thither for the prefent: and as I had made no fcruple of being openly of the religion of the country, all the while I was among them, fo neither did I yet; only that now and then having of fite thought more of it than formerly, when I began to think of living nd dying among them, I began to nd dying among thom, Papift, and thought it might not be the beft religion to die in.
But, as I have faid, this was not the main thing that kept me from going to the Brazils, but that really I did not know with whom to leave my effects behind me ; fo I refolved at laft to go to England with them, where, if 1 arrived, I concluded I fhould make fome acquaintance, or find fome relations, that would be faithful to me; and acthatingly I prepared to go for England cordingly I prepared
In order to prepare things for my going home, I firt (the Brazil fleet being juft going away) refolved to give anfwers fuitable to the juft and faithful account of things I had from thence; and firft to the Prior of St. Auguitine I wrote a letter full of thanks Auguitine wrote a letter the offer of for his juft dealings, and the offer of the eight hundred and feventy-two moidores, which were undifpofed of, which I defired might be given, five hundred to the monattery, and three hundred and feventy-two to the poor, hundred and forld direct, defiring the as the prior fhould direct, defiring the good padres prayers for me, and the like.
I wrote next a letter of thanks to my two truftees, with all the acknowledgment that fo much juitice and honefty called for. As for fending then
any prefent, they were far above having any occafion of it.
Laftly, I wrote to my partner, acknowledging his induftry in the improving the plantation, and his integrity in increafing the ftock of the works, giving him inftructions for his future government of my part, according to the powers I had left with my old patron, to whom I defired him to fend whatever becane due to me, till he fhould hear from me more particularly; affuring him, that it was my intention, not only to come to him, but to fettle myfelf there for the remainder of my life. To this I added a very handfome prefent of fome ItaJian filks for his wife and two daughters, for fuch the captain's fon informed me he had; with two pieces of fine Englifh broad-cloth, the beft I could get in Lifbon, five pieces of black baize, and fome Flanders lace of a good value.

Having thus fettled my affairs, fold my cargo, and turned all my effects into good bills of exchange, my next difficulty was, which way to go to England. I had been accuftomed enough to the fea, and yet I had a Afrange averfion to go to England by fea at that time; and though I could give no reafon for it, yet the difficulty increafed upon me fo much, that though I had once flipped my baggage in order to go, yet I altered my mind, and that not once, but two or three times.

It is true, I had been very unfortunate by fea, and this might be one of the reafons; but let no man dlight the ftrong impulfes of his own thoughts in cafes of fuch moment. Two of the fhips which I had fingled out to go in, I mean, more particularly fingled out than any other; that is to fay, fo as in one of them to put my things on board, and in the other to have agreed with the captain; I fay, two of thefe fhips mifcarried, viz. one was taken by the Algerines, and the other was caft away on the Start near Torbay, and all the people drowned except three; fo that in either of thofe vefiels I had been made miferable, and in which moff, it was hard to fay.
Having been thus harafled in my thoughts, my old pilot, to whom I communicated every thing, preffed me
earnefly not to go by fea; but either to go by land to the Groyne, and crofs over the Bay of Bifcay to Rochelle, from whence it was but an eafy and fafe journey by land to Paris, and fo to Calais and Dover; or to go up to Madrid, and fo all the way by land through France.

In a word, I was fo prepoffeffed againft my going by fea at all, except from Calais to Dover, that I refolved to travel all the way by land: which, as I was not in hafte, and did not value the charge, was by much the pleafanter way; and to make it more fo, my old captain brought an Englifh gentleman, the fon of a merchant in Lißon, who was willing to travel with me. After which we picked up two who were Englifh merchants alfo, and two young Portugueze gentiemen, the laft going to Paris only; fo that we were in all fix of us, and five fervants, the two merchants, and the two Portugueze, contenting themfelves with one fervant between two, to fave the charge; and as for me, I got an Englifh failor to travel with me as a fervant, befides my man Friday, who was too much a ftranger to be capable of fupplying the place of a fervant upon the road.
In this manner I fet out from Lifbon; and our company being all very well mounted and armed, we made a little troop, whereof they did me the honour to call me captain, as well becaufe I was the oldeit man, as becaufe I had two fervants, and indeed was the original of the whole journey.
As I have troubled you with none of my fea journals, fo fhall I trouble you with none of my land journal: but fome adventures that happened to us in this tedions and difficult journey, I muft not omit.
When we came to Madrid, we, being all of us ftrangers to Spain, were willing to ttay fome time to fee the court of Spain, and to fee what was worth obferving; but it being the latter part of the fummer, we haftened away, and fet out from Madrid about the middle of October. But when we came to the edge of Navarre, we were alarmed at feveral towns on the way? with an account that fo much fnow was fallen on the French fide of the mountains, that feveral travellers were
obliged to come back to Pampelura, after having attempted, at an extreme hazard, to pafs on.

When we came to Pampeluna itfelf, we found it fo indeed; and to me that had been always ufed to an hot climate and indeed to countries where we could fcarce bear any cloaths on, the cold was unfufferable; nor, indeed, was it more painful than it was furprizing, to come but ten days before out of the Old Caftile, where the weather was not only warm, but very hot; and immediately to feel a wind from the Pyrenean mountains, fo very keen, fo feverely cold, as to be intolerable, and to endanger benumbing and perifhing of our fingers and toes, was very ffrange.

Poor Friday was really frighted when he faw the mountains all covered with fnow, and felt cold weather which he had never feen or felt before in his life.

To mend the matter, after we came to Pampeluna, it continued fnowing with fo much violence, and fo long, that the people faid, 'Winter was come before it's time; and the roads, which were difficult before, were now quite impaffable: in a word, the fnow lay in fome places too thick for us to travel; and being not hard frozen, as is the cafe in Northern countries, there was no going without being in danger of being buried alive every ftep. We taid no lefs than twenty days at Pampeluna; when (feing the winter coming on, and no likelihood of it's being better, for it was the fevereft winter alt over Europe that had been known in many years) I propofed that we fhould all go away to Fontarabia, and there take fhipping for Bourdeaux, which was a very little voyage.

But while we were confidering this, there came in four French gentlemen, who, having been ftopped on the French fide of the paffes, as we were on the Spanifh, had found out a guide, who, traverfing the country near the head of Languedoc, had broughtthem over the mountains by fuch ways, that they were not much incommoded with the fnow; and where they met with fnow in any quantity, they faid it was frozen hard enough to bear them and their horfes.

We fent for this guide, whotold us, he would undertake to carry us the
fame way, with no hazard from the fnow, provided we were armed fufficiently to protect us from wild beafts; for, he faid, upon thefe great fnows, it was frequent for fome wolves to it was fhemfelves at the foot of the mountains, being made ravenous for want of food, the ground being covered with fnow. We told him we were will por fuch creawell enough prepared for fuch infure tures as they were, if he wore us from a kind of two-legged wolves, which we were told we were in moft danger from, efpecially on the French danger the mountains.
He fatisfied us that there was no langer of that kind in the way that we danger of that ki readily agreed to were to go: 10 we readiy gre ther follow him; as did alfo twelve other gentlemen, with their fervants, fome French, fome Spanifh, who, as I laid, had attempted to go, and were obliged to come back again
Accordingly we all fet out from Pampeluna, with our guide, on the Isth of November; and, indeed, I was furprized, when, inttead of going forward, he came direetly back with Is, on the fame road that we came from Madrid, above twenty miles; when having paffed two rivers, and come into the plain country, we found ourfelves in a warm climate again, where the country was pleafant, and no foow be feen; but, on a fudden, fnowing to the left, he approached the turning to thother way; and though mountains the hills and the precipices it is true, the hills yet me made looked dreadfully, yet bea many tours, fuch meanders, and us by fuch winding ways, we infenfibly paffed the height of the mquntains, without being much inoumbered with the fnow; and all on a fudden he fhewed us the pleafant fruitful provinces of Languedoc and Gafcoigne, all green and flourifhing; though, indeed, they were at a great diftance, deed, they fome rough way nd we had fome rough way to pafs yet.

We were a little uneafy however, when we found it fnowed one whole day and a night, fo faft, that we could not travel; but he bid us be eafy, we fhould foon be paft it all. We found, indeed, that we began to defcendevery day, and to come more north than day, and and fo, depending upon our before; and 10 ,

It was about two hours before night,
when our guide being fomething before us, and not juit in figint, out rafhed three monftious wolves, and after them a bear, out of a hollow way, adjoining to a thick wood; two of the wolves flew upon the guide; and had he been half a mile before us, he had been devoured indeed, before we could have helped him. One of them faltened upon his horfe, and the other attacked the man, with that violence, that he bad not time, or not prefence of mind enough, to draw his pifol, but hallooed and cried out to us moft luftily; my man Friday being next to me, I bid him ride up, and fee what was the matter. As foon as Friday came in frght of the man, he hallooed as loud as the other, 'O mafter! O mafter !' But, like a bold fellow, rode direetly up to the man, and with his piltol thot the wolf that attacked him into the head.
It was happy for the poor man, that it was my man Friday ; for he, having been ufed to that kind of creature in his country, had no fear upon him, but went up clofe to him, and fhot him, as above; whereas any of us wonld have firet at a farther diftance, and have, perhaps, either miffed the wolf, or endangered fhooting the man.

But it was enough to have terrified 2 bolder man than $I$; and indeed it alarmed all our company, when, with the noife of Friday's piltol, we heard on both fides the difmalleft howlings of wolves, and the noife redoubled by the echo of the mountains, that it was to us as if there had been a prodigious multitude of them ; and perhaps, indeed, there was not fuch a few, as that we had no caufe of apprehenfions.
However, as Friday had killed this wolf, the other, that had faftened upon the horfe, left him immediately, and fled, having happily faftened upon his head, where the boffes of the bridle had fack in his teeth, fo that he had not done him much hurt : the man, indeed, was moit hurt; for the raging creature had bit him twice, once on the arm, and the other time a. little above his knee; and he was juft as it were tumbling down by the diforder of the horfe, when Friday came up and fhot the wolf.
It is eafy to fuppofe, that at the moife of Friday's piftol, we all mended
our pace, and rid up as faft as the way (which was very difficult) would give us leave, to fee what was the matter : as foon as we came clear of the trees, which blinded us before, we faw plainly what had been the cafe, and how Friday had difengaged the poor guide ; though we did not prefently difeern what kind we did not prefently difeern what
of creature it was he had killed.
of creature it was he had killed.
But never was a fight managed fo hardily, and in fuch a furprizing manner, as that which followed between Friday and the bear, which gave us all (though at firtt we were furprized and afraid for him) the greateft diverfion imaginable. As the bear is a heavy, clumfy creature, and does not gallop as the wolf does, which is fwift and light, fo he has two particular qualities, which generally are the rule of his actions : firft, as to men, who are not his proper prey; I fay, not his proper prey, though I cannot fay what exceffive hunger might do, which was now their cafe, the ground being all covered with fnow; yet; as to men, he does not ufually attempt them, unlefs they firft attack him. trary, if you meet him in the woods, though if you do not meddle with him, he won't meddle with you; yet, then, you muft take care to be very civil to him, and give him the road; for he is a very nice gentleman, he won't go a ftep out of the way for a prince ; nay, if you are really afraid, your belt way is to look another way, and keep going on; for fometimes, if you ftop, and ftand ftill, and look ftedfaltly at him, he takes it for an affront; but if you throw or tofs any thing at him, and it hits him, though it were but a bit of ftick as big as your finger, he takes it for an affiont, and fets all other bufinefs afide to purfue his revenge; for he will have fatisfaction in point of honour ; and this is his firft quality: the next is, that if he be once affronted, he will never leave you night or day, till he has his revenge, but follow at a good round rate till he overtakes you.
My man Friday had delivered our guide, and when we came up to him, he was helping him off from his horfe; for the man was both hurt and frighted, and indeed the laft more than the firlt; when, on a fudden, we fied the bear come out of the wood, and a vaft monfrous one it was, the biggent by far
that ever I faw. We were all a little furprized when we faw him; but when Friday faw him, it was eafy to fee joy and courage in the fellow's counte nance: 'O! O! O!' fays Friday, three times, pointing to him, ${ }^{6} \mathrm{O}$ ma6 Iter! you give me te leave, me 6 fhakee te hand with him; me makee ' you good laugh.'
I was furprized to fee the fellow fo pleafed. 'You fool you,' faid I, 'he 6 will eat you up.' - Eatee me up! ' eatee me up!' fays Friday twice over again; 'Me eatee him up; me 6 makee you good laugh; you all ftay - hake me flew you good laugh.' So down he fits, and gets his boots off in a moment, and put on a pair of pumps, (as we call the flat fhoes they wear) and which he had in his pocket, gives my other fervant his horfe, and, with his gun, away he flew, fwift like the his gu
wind.
The bear was walking foftly on, and offered to meddle with nobody, till Friday, coming pretty near, calls to him, as if the bear could under fand him. 'Hark ye, hark ye,' fays Friday, ' me fpeakee wit you. We followed at a diftance; for now being come down to the Gafcoigne fide of the mountains, we were entered a vaft great foref, where the country was plain, and pretty open, though many trees in it fcattered here and there.

Friday, who had, as we fay, the heels of the bear, came up with him quickly, and takes up a great ftone, and throws at him, and hit him juft on the head; but did him no more harm than if he had thrown it againft a wall : but it anfwered Friday's end; for the rogue was fo void of fear, that he did it purely to make the bear follow him, and fhew us fome laugh, as he called it.

As foon as the bear felt the ftone, and faw him, he turns about, and comes after him, taking devilifh long羔rides, and fhuffling along at a ftrange rate, fo as would put a horle to a middling gallop; away runs Friday, and takes his courfe as if he ran towards us for help; fo we all refolved to fire at once upon the bear, and deliver my man; though I was angry at him heartily for bringing the bear back upon us, when he was going about his own bufinefs another way; and efpecially I was angry that he had
turned the bear upon us, and then run away; and I called out, 'You dog'," faid I, ' is this your making us laugh? - Come away, and take your horfe, that we may fhoot the creature. He hears me, and cries out, 'No fhoot, 6. no fioot f ftand ftill, you get much 6 no fioot; fta ' laugh!' and as the nimble creature ran two feet for the beat's one, he turned on a fudden, on one fide of us, and feeing a great oak tree, fit for his purpofe, he beckoned us to follow, and doubling his pace, he gets nimbly up the tree, laying his gun down upon the ground, at about five or fix yards from the bottom of the tree.
The bear foon came to the tree, and we followed at a diftance; the firt thing he did, he fopt at the gun, fmelt to it but let it lie, and up he frambles into the tree, climbing like a though fo monftroufly heavy. a cat, thoug the folly, as I thought it, of my man, and could not for my life fee any thing to laugh at yet, till, feeing the bear get up the tree, we all rode nearer to him.
When we came to the tree, there was Friday ort ont to the fmall part of was Friday got out ree a large limb of the tree, and the bear got about half way to him. As foon as the bear got out to that part where the limb of the tree was weaker, ${ }^{\prime} \mathrm{Ha}$, fays he to us, 'now you fee me reachee ' the beai dance!' So he falls a jumpthe bea form the bough at which ing, and fhaking the bough, at which the bear began to totter, but food ftil, and began to look behind him, to fee how he flould get back; then, indeed, we did laugh heartily. But Friday had not done with him by a great deal. When be fees him ftand ftill, he calls Whe rain, as if he had fupout to him again Cpea Enclifh. pofed the bear could fpeak Englith. 6 What, you come no farther ? Pray 6 you come farther !' So he Teft jumping and fhaking the bouglr; and the bear, juft as if he underitood what he faid, did come a little farther; then he fell a jumping again, and the bear he fell a jumping again, and the bear ftopped again.
We thought now was a good time to knock him on the head, and called to Friday to ftand ftill, and we would thoot the bear ; but he cried out earneftly, 'O pray! O pray! no fhoot; ' me 'thoot by and then !' he would have faid, 'by and by." However, to fhorten the fory, Friday danced fo much, and the bear ftood fo tickliff,
that we had laughing enough indeed, but fill could not imagine what the fellow would do; for firft we thought he depended upon flaking the bear off; and we found the bear was too cunning for that too; for he would not get out far enough to be thrown down, but clings faft with his great broad claws and feet, fo that we could not imagine what would be the end of it, and where the jeft would be at laft.
But Friday put us out of doubt quickly; for feeing the bear cling faft to the bough, and that he would not be perfuaded to come any farther; 'Well, well,' faid Friday, 'you no © come farther, me go, me go; you ' no come to me, me come to you.' And upon this he goes out to the fimalleft end of the boush, where it fhould bend with his weight, and gently lets himfelf down by it, fliding down the bough, till he came near enough to jump down on his feet, and away he ran to his gun, takes it up, and ftands ftill.
' Well,' faid I to him; ' Friday, what © will you do now? Why don't you ©fioot him?'- 'No fhoot,' fays Friday, 'no yet; me fhoot now, me no kill: - me ftay, give you one more laugh.’ And indeed fo he did, as you will fee prefently; for when the bear faw his enemy gone, he comes back from the bough where he food, but did it mighty leifurely, looking behind him every ftep, and coming backward till he got into the body of the tree : then, with the fame hinder end foremoft, he came down the tree, grafping it with his claws, and moving one foot at a time, very leifurely; at this jancture, and juft before he could fet his hind feet upon the ground, Friday fepped clofe to him, clapped the muzzle of his piece into his ear, and fhot him dead as a ftone.

Then the rogue turned about, to fee if we did not laugh; and when he faw we were pleafed by our looks, he falls a laughing himfelf very loud. 'So 6 we kill bear in my country, fays Friday. 'So you kill them,' faid I; if why, you haveno guns.'- 'Nu,' fays he, fo guns, but floot great much ' Long arrow.'
This was, indeed, a good diverfion to us; but we were ftill in a wild place, and our guide very much hurt, and what to do we hardly knew; the howl.
ing of wolves ran much im my head; and, indeed, except the noife I once heard on the fhore of Africa, of which I have faid fomething already, I never heard any thing that filled me with fo much horror.
Thefe things, and the approach of night, called us off, or elfe, as Friday would have had us, we fhould certainly have taken the fkin of this monftrous creature off, which was worth faving; but we had three leagues to go, and our guide haftened us; fo we left him, and went forward on our journey.
The ground was fill covered with fnow, though not fo deep and dangerous as on the mountains; and the ravenous creatures, as we heard afterwards, were come down into the foreft, and plain country, preffed by bunger, to feek for food; and had done a gypat deal of mifchief in the, villages, where they furprized the country people, killed a great many of their fheep and horfes, and fome people too.

We had one dangerous place to pafs, of which our guide told us, if there were any more wolves in the country, we fhould find them there; and this was a fmall plain, furrounded with woods on every fide, and a long narrow defile or lane, which we were to pals to get through the wood, and then we Chould come to the village where we were to lodge.
It was within half an houn of fun-fet when we entered the firf wood; and a little after fun-fet when we came into the plain. We met with nothing in the firft wood, except that in: a little plain within the wood, which was not above two furlongs over, we fatw five great wolves crofs the road, full fpeed one after another, as if they had been in chace of fome prey, and had it in view ; they took ne notice of us, and were gone and out of our fight in a few moments.
Upon this, our guide, who, by the way, was a wretched faint-hearted fellow, bade us keep in a ready pofture, for he believed there were more wolves a coming.
We kept our arms ready, and our eyes ahout us; but we faw no more wolves till we came through that wood, which was near half a league, and entered the plain. As foon as we came
into the plain, we had occafion enough to look about us. The firft object we met with, was a dead horfe; that is to poor horfe which the wolves to fad killed, and at leaft a dozen of them at work; we could not fay eating of him, but picking of his bones rather, for they had eaten up all the Hem before.
We did not think fit to difturb them at their feaft, neither did they take much notice of us. Friday would have let fly at them, but I would not fuffer him by any means; for I found we were like to have more bufinefs upon our hands than we were aware of We were not half gone over the plain, but we began to hear the wolves how in the wood, on our left, in a frightful manner; and prefently after we faw about a hundred coming on directly towards us, all in a body, and moft of them in a line, as regularly as an army drawn up by experienced officers. I fcarce knew in what manner to receive them; but found, to draw ourfelves in a clofe line, was the only way: fo we formed in a mothe only way: fo we fight not have ment; but, that 1 every other man flould fire; and that the others, who had not fired, fhould ftand ready to give them a fecond volley immediately, if they continued to advance upon as; who had fired at frits agin, but tend to load their every one a piftol; for we were all armed with a fufil, and a pair of piftols! each man; fo we were, by this method, able to fire fix volleys, half of us at a time. However, at prefent, we had no neceffity; for, upon firing the firf yolley, the enemy made a full ftop, being terrified, as well with the noife, as with the fire: four of them, being fhot in the head, dropped; feveral others were wounded, and went bleeding off, as we could fee by the fnow. I found they fopped, butdid notimmediately retreat; whereupon, remembering that inad been told, that the fiercelt creatares were terrified at the voice of a man, 1 cauled all our company to halloo as loud as we could; and I found the notion not altogether miftaken; for, upon our frout, they began to retire, and turn about; then I ordered a fecond volley to be fired in their rear, which put
them to the gallop, and away they went to the woods.
This gave us leifure to charge our pieces again; and, that we might lofe no time, we kept doing; but we had but little more than loaded our fufils, and put ourfelves into a readinefs, when we heard a terrible noife in the fame wood on our left ; only that it was farther onward the fame way we were to go.
The night was coming on, and the night began to be dufky, which made it the worfe on our fide: but, the noife increafing, we could eafily perneive that it was the howling and yell cive thofe hellifh creatures and yell jng of thole hellin creatures; and, on a fudden, we perceived two or three troops of wolves, one on our left, one behind us, and one on our front; fo that we feemed to be furrounded with them ; however, as they did not fall upon us, we kept our way forward, as faft as we could make our horfes go, which, the way being very rough, was which, the way being manner we only came in view of the manner we only came in view of the entrance of the wood, through which we were to pafs, at the farther fide of the plain; but we were greatly furprized, when, coming near the lane, or pals, we faw a confufed number of wolves ftanding juft at the entrance.

On a fudden, at another opening of the wood, we heard the noife of a gun; and, locking that way, out ruhed a horfe, with a faddle and a bridle on him, fiying like the wind, and fixteen or feventeen wolves after him, full fpeed; indeed the horfe had the heels of them; but, as we fuppofed that be could not hold it at that rate, we doubted not but they would get up with him at laft ; and no queftion bus they did.
Here we had a moft horrible fight; for, riding up to the entrance where the horfe came out, we found the carcafe of another horfe, and of two men, devoured by thefe ravenous creatures, and one of the men was, no doubt, the fame whom we heard fire the gun; for there lay a gun juft the gim fred off; but, as to the man, by him fired ofr; but, his head, and the upper part of his body, were eaten up.

This filled in with horror, and we knew not what courle to take; but the creatures refolved us foom; for they
gathered
gathered about us prefently, in hopes of prey; and I verily believe there were three hundred of them. It happened, very much to our advantage, that at the entrance into the wood, but a little way from it, there lay fome large timber-trees, which had been cut down the fummer before, and I fuppofe lay there for carriage. I drew my little troop in among thefe trees; and placing ourfelves in a line behind one large tree, I advifed them all to alight, and, keeping that tree before us, for a breaft-work, to ftand in a triangle, or three fronts, inclofing our horfes in the centre.
We did fo, and it was well we did; for never was a more furious charge than the creatures made upon us in this place: they came on us with a growling kind of a noife, and mounted the piece of timber, (which, as I faid, was our brealt-work) as if they were only ruhing upon their prey; and this fury of theirs, it feems, was principally occafioned by their feeing our horfes behind us, which was the prey they aimed at. I ordered our men to fire as before, every other man; and they took their aim fo fure, that indeed they killed feveral of the wolves at the firf volley; but there was a neceffity to keep a continual firing, for they came on like devils, thofe behind pufhing on thofe before.

When we had fired our fecond volley of our fufils, we thought they ftopped a little, and I hoped they would have gone off; but it was but a moment, for others came forward again ; fo we fired our volleys of our pifols; and I believe in thefe four firings, we killed feventeen or eighteen of them, and lamed twice as many; yet they came on again.
I was loth to fpend our laft thot too haltily; fo I called my fervant, not my man Friday, for he was better employed; for, with the greateft dexterity imaginable, he charged my fufil, and his own, while we were engaged; but, as I raid, I called my other man, and giving him a horn of powder, I bade him lay a train all along the piece of timber, and let it be a largettrain: he did fo, and had but juft time to get away when the wolves came up to it, and fome were got up upon it; when 1, fnapping ah uncharged piftol clofe to the powder,
fet it on fire; and thofe that were upa on the timber were fcorched with it, and fix or feven of them fell, or rather jumped in among us, with the force and fright of the fire; we difpatched thefe in an inftant, and the reft were fo frighted with the light, which the night, for now it was very near dark, made more terrible, that they drew back a little.
Upon which I ordered our laft piftols to be fired off in one volley, and after that we gave a fhout : upon this the wolves turned tail, and we fallied immediately upon near twenty lame ones, which we found ftruggling on the ground, and fell a cutting them with our fwords; which anfwered our expectation, for the crying and howling they made were better underftood by their fellows; fo that they fled, and left us.

We had, firft and laft, killed about threefcore of them; and had it been day - light, we had killed many more. The field of battle being thus cleared, we made forward again; for we had ftill near a league to go. We heard the ravenous creatures howl and yell in the woods as we went feveral times; and fometimes we fancied we faw fome of them, but the fnow dazzling our. eyes, we were not certain; fo, in about an hour more, we came to the fown, where we were to lodge, which we found in a terrible fright, and all in arms; for it feems, that the night before, the wolves and fome bears had broken into that village, and put them in a terrible fright; and they were obliged to keep guard night and day, but efpecially in the night, to preferve their cattle, and indeed their people.
The next morning our guide was fo ill, and his limbs fo fwelled with the rankling of his two wounds, that he could go no farther; fo we were obliged to take a new guide there, and go to Tholoufe, where we found a warm climate, a fruitful pleafant country, and no fnow, no wolves, or any thing like them; but when we told our fory at Tholoufe, they told us it was nothing but what was ordinary in the great foreft at the foot of the mountains, efpecia!ly when the fnow lay on the ground: but they enquired much what kind of a guide we had gotten, that would venture to bring us that way in fuch a fevere feafon; and told
us, it was very much we were not all devoured. When we told them how devoured ourfelves, and the horfes we placed ourele they blamed us exceedingly, and told us, it was fifty to one but we had been all deftroyed ; for it was the fight of the horfes that made the wolves fo furious, feeing their prey; and that at other times they are preally afraid of a gun; but they being exceffive hungry, and raging on that exceunt angernefs to come at the horfes had made them fenfelefs of danver; and that if we had not by the continued fire, and at laft by the ftratagem of the train of powder, maltered them, it had been great odds but that we had been torn to pieces; whereas, had we been content they back, and fired as hore would not have taken the horfes io much for their own, when men were on their backs, as otherwife; and withal they told us, that at lait, if we had frood all together, and left our horfes, they would have been fo eager to have devoured them, that we might have come off fafe, efpecially having our fire-arms in our hands, and being fo many in number.
Formy part, I was never fo fenfible of danger in my life; for feeing above three hundred devils come roand open-mouthed to devour us, retreat to I nothing I gave metieve, I fhall never care to crofs thofe mountains again; I think I would thore mountains agho leagues by much rather go aere fure to meet with a ftorm once a week.
I have nothing uncommon to take notice of, in my paffage through France; nothing but what other travellers have given an account of with much more advantage than I can. I travelled from Tholoufe to Paris, and without any confiderable fay came to Calais, and landed fafe at Dover the 14th of January, after having had a fevere cold featon to travel in.
I was now come to the centre of my travels, and had in a little time all my new difcovered eftate fafe about me; the bills of exchange, which $I$ brought with me, having been very currently paid.
My principal guide, and privy-counfellor, was my good ancient widow; who, in gratitude for the money I had
fent her, thought no pains too much,
or care too great, to employ for me; and I trulted her fo entirely with every thing, that I was perfectly eafy as to the fecurity of my effects; and indeed I was very happy from my beginning, and now to the end, in the unfpotted integrity of this good gentlewoman.
And now I began to think of leaving my effects with this woman, and fetting out for Lifon, and fo to theBrazils; the but now another religion. for the way, and that was religion.: for as I had entertained fome doubts about the Roman religion, even while I was abroad, efpecially in my fate of folitude; fo I knew there was no going to the Brazils for me, much lefs going to fettle there, unlefs I refolved to embrace the Roman Colholick relizion without any referve; except, on the other hand, I refolved to be a facrifice other hand, to my principles, the inquifition; foI Iigion, and die in the inquiftion; refolved to flay at home, and (if If could find means for it) to difpofe of my plantation.
To this purpofe I wrote to my old friend at Lifbon, who in return gave me notice, that he could eafily difpofe of it there: but that if I thought fit to give him leave to offer it in my name to the two merchants, the furvivors of my trultees who lived in the Brazils, who muft fully underfand the value of it, who lived juft upon the fpot, and whom I knew to be very rich, fo that he believed they would be fond of but he lieved did not doubt but I buying it; he did not douke four or five thoufand pieces of eight the more of it.
Accordingly I agreed, gave him orders to offer it to them, and he did fo; and, in about eight months more, the fhip being then returned, he fent me an*account, that they had accepted the offer, and had remitted thirty three thouland pieces of eight to a correfpondent of theirs at Limon, to pay for it.

In return, I figned the inftrument of fale in the form which they fent from Libon, and fent it to my old man, who fent me the bills of exchange for thirty two thoufand eight hundred pieces of eight for the eftate; referving the payment of one hundred moidores a year to him, the old man, during his life, and fifty moidores afterwards to his fon for his life, which I had to his fon for his life, wromifed
promifed them ; and which the plantation was to make good as a rentcharge. And thas I liave given the firlt part of a life of fortune and adt venture, a life of Providence ${ }^{\text {s }}$ s che ${ }^{2}$ quer-work, and of a variety which the world will feddom be able to flew the like of; beginning foolifhly, but clofing much more happily than any part of it ever gave me leave fo much as to hope for.
Any one would think, that in this fate of complicated good fortune, I was paft running any more hazards; and fo indeed I had been, if other circumfances had occurred; but I was inured to a wandering life, had no family, nor many relations; nor, however rich, had I contracted much acquaintance; and though I had fold my eftate in the Brazils, yet I could not keep that country out of my head, and had a great mind to be upon the wing again; efpecially I could not refift the trong inclination I had to fee my inand, and to know if the poor Spaniards were in being there ; and how the rogues I left there had ufed them.
My true friend, the widow, earneftly diffuaded me from it; and fo far prevailed with me, that almoft for feven years the prevented my running abroad; during which time I took my two nephews, the children of one of my brothers, into my care : the eldeft, having fomething of his own, I bred up as a gentieman, and gave him a fettlement of fome addition to his eftate after my deceafe; the other I put out to a captain of a fhip; and after five years, finding him a fenfible, bold, enterprizing young fellow, I put him into a good fhip, and fent him to fea: and this young fellow afterwards drew me in, as old as I was, to farther adventures myfelf.
In the mean time, $I$ in part fettled myfelf here: for firt of all I married, and that not either to my difadvantage or diffatisfaction; and had three children, two fons and one daughter. But my wife dying, and my nephew coming home with good fuccefs from a Voyage to Spain, my inclination to go abroad, and his importunity, prevailed, and engaged me to go in his thip as a private trader to the Eaft-Indies. This was in the year 1694.

In this voyage I vifited my new co-

Jony in the ifland; faw my fucceffors, the Spaniards; had the whole fory of their lives, and of the villdins I left there : how at firtt they infulted the poor Spaniards; how they afterwards agreed, difagreed, united, feparated, and how at lath the Spaniards were obliged to ufe violence with them; how they were fubjetted to the Spaniards ; how honeftly the Spaniards ufed them ; an hiffory, if it were entered into, as full of variety and wonderful accidents as my own part; particularly alfo as to their battles with the Caribbeans, who landed feveral times upon the inland, and as to the improvement they made upon the ifland itfelf; and how five of them made an attempt upon the main land, and brought away eleven men and five womien prifoners; by which, at my coming, I found about twenty young children on the ifland.
Here I frayed about twenty days; left them fupplies of all neceffary things, and particularly of arms, powder, fiot, cloaths, tools, and two workmen, which I brought from England with me; viz. a carpenter and a fmith.
Befides this, I fhared the land into parts with them, referved to myfelf the property of the whole, but gave them fuch parts, refpectively, as they agreed on; and, having fettled all things with them, and engaged them not to leave the place, I left theni there.
From thence I touched at the Brazils, from whence I fent a bark, which I bought there, with more people to the ifland; and in it, befides other fupplies, I fent feven women, being fuchas I found proper for fervice, or for wives to fuch as would take them. As to the Englifhmen, I promifed them to fend them fome women from England, with a good cargo of neoeffaries, if they would apply themfelves to planting; which I afterwards could not perform. The fellows proved very honeft and diligent, after they were maffered, and had their properties fet apart for them. I fent them alfo from the Brazils five cows, (three of them being big with calf) fome freep, and fome hogs swhich, when I came again, were confiderably increaled.
But all thefe things, with an ascount how three hundred Caribbeans came and invaded them, and ruined
their plantations; and how they fought with that whole number twice, and were at firft defeated, and one of them were at aftroying killed; but at latt a form dey famifhed their enemies canoes, they feft, and reor deftroyed almoft all the relf, affion of newed and recovered the poffeffion of
their plantation, and fill lived upon the ifland.

All thefe things, with fome very furprizing incidents in fome new adventures of my own, for ten years more, I may, perthps, give a farther account of hereafter.


THE
Preface to the Second Volume

OF
ROBINSON CRUSOE.

HE fuccefs the former part of this Work has met with in the world, has yet been no other than is acknowledged to be due to the furprizing variety of the fubject, and to the agreeable manner of the performance.

All the endeatours of envious people to reproach it with being a romance, to fearch it for errors in geography, inconfiftency in the relation, and contradictions in the fact, have proved abortive, and as impotent as malicious.

The juft application of every incident, the religious and ufeful inferences drawn from every part, are fo many teltimonies to the good defign of making it publick, and muft legitimate all the part that may be called invention or parable in the ftory.

The fecond part, if the Editor's opinion may pass, is (contrary to the ufage of fecond parts) every way as entertaining as the firft; contains as ftrange and furprizing incidents, and as great a variety of them; nor is the application lefs ferious or fuitable; and doubtlefs will, to the fober as well as ingenious reader, be every way as profitable and diverting : and this makes the abridging this work as fcandalous, as it is knavifh and ridiculous; feeing, to fhorten the book, that they may feem to reduce the value, they ftrip it of all thofe reflections, as well religious as moral, which are not only the greatelt beauties of the work, but are calculated for the infinite advantage of the reader.

By this, they leave the work naked of it's brighteft ornaments; and yet they would (at the fame time they pretend that the author has fupplied his fory out of his invention) take from it the improvement which alone recommends that invention to wife and good men.

The injury thefe men do to the proprietors of works, is a practice all honeft men abhor; and they believe they may challenge them to fhew the difference between that and robbing on the highway, or breaking open a houfe.

If they cannot fhew any difference in the crime, they will find it hard to fhew why there fhould be any difference in the punifiment.

DANIEL DEFOE.

trown wompar


THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES













my fancy worked fo fteadily and of them true in fact. And it was fo frongly upon if, that I talked of it in warm in my imagination, and fo reamy fleep: in fhort, nothing could remove it out of my mind. It even broke fo violently into all my difcourfes, that it made my converfation tirefome; for I could talk of nothing elfe; all my difcourfe run into it, even to impertinence, and I faw it myfelf.
I have often heard perfons of good judgment fay, that all the ftir people make in the world about ghofts and apparitions, is owing to the ftrength of imagination, and the powerfnl operation of fancy in their minds; that there is no fuch thing as a fpirit appearing, or a ghoft walking, and the like: that people's poring affectionately upon the palt converfation of their deceafed friends fo realizes it to them, that they are capable of fancying upon fome extraordinary circumftances, that they fee them, talk to them, and are anfwered by them; wwhen, in truth, there is nothing but Thadow and vapour in the thing, and they really know nothing of the matter. For my part, I khow not to this hour, whether there are any fuch things as real apparitions, fpectres, or walking of people after they are dead, or whether there is any thing in the ftovies they tell us of that kind, more than the product of vapours, fick minds, and wandering fancies: but this I know, that my imagination worked me up to fuch a height, and brought me into fuch excels of vapours, or what elfe I may call it, that I actually fuppofed mylelf oftentimes upon the foot, at my old cafle behind the trees; faw my old Spaniard, Friday's father, and the reprobate lailors, whom I teft upon the inand; nay, I fancied I talked with them, and looked at them fo fteadily, though I was broad awake, as at perfons juft before me and this I did, till I often frightened myfelf with the images my fancy releep, I had the villaing of in my fleep, I had the villainy of the three pirate failors fo lively related to me, by the firft Spaniard and Friday's father, that it was furprizing; they told me how they barbaroully attempted to murder all the Spaniards, and that they fet fre to the provifions they had laid up, on purpofe to diffrefs and itarve them: things that I had never heard of, and that yet were all
them to me, that to the hour I faw them, I could not be perfuaded, but that it was, or would be true; alfo how I refented it, when the Spaniards complained to me; and how I brought them to juftice, tried them before me and ordered them all three to be hanged. What there was really in this, fhall be feen in it's place. For this, ever I came to form fuch things in my dream, and what fecret converfe of fpirits injected it, yet there was, I fay, very much of it true. I own that this dream had nothing in it literally and fpecifically true; but the general part was fo true, the bafe and villainous behaviour of thefe three hardened rogues was fuch, and had been fo much worfe than all I can defcribe, that the dream had too much fimilizude of the fact; and as I would afterwards have punifhed them feverely, fo if I had hanged them all, I had been much in the right, and fhould have been juftified both by the laws of God and man.

But to return to my ftory. In this I had no enior I had lived fome years; I had no enjoyment of my life, no pleafant hours, no agreeable diverfion, but what had fomething or other of my mind fo that my wife, who faw my mind fo wholly bent upon it, told me very ferioufly one night, that the believed there was fome fecret powerful impufe of Providence upon me, which had determined me to go thither asain; and that fhe found nothing hindered my going, but my being engaged to a wife and children. She told me, that it was true fhe could not think of parting with me; but as fhe was affured, that if the was dead, it would beemed firlt thing I would do; fo, as it feemed to her, that the thing was determined above, fhe would not be the only obftruction: for, if I thought fit and refolved to go- Here flae found me very intent upon her words, and that I looked very earneftly at her; fo that it a little difordered her, and fhe ftopped. I alked her why fhe did not go on, and fay out what the was going to fay. But I perceived her beart was too fuli, and fome tears food in her eyes. \&Speak ' out, my dear,' fays I: ' are you ' willing I fhould go ?'-' 'No, you fhe, very affectionately, ‘' No, fays ffom willing! But if 'I am fag u aife re-

- rolved
folved to go,' fays fhe, 'rather than I will be the only hindrance, I will go with you; for though I think it a prepofterous thing for one of your 6 years, and in your condition; yet, if - it mult be,' faid the again, weeping,
- I won't leave you! tor if it be of - Heaven, you mult do it, there is no 6 refifting it; and if Heaven makes it - your duty to go, he will alfo make it 6 mine to go with you, or orherw ob-- difpofe of me, that I may not ob-- ftruct it.

This affectionate behaviour of my wife, brought me a little out of the vapours, and I began to confider what I was a doing. I corrected my wandering fancy, and began to argue with my felf fedately, what bufineis I had, fter threefcore years, and after fuch life of tedious fufferings and difafters, and clofed in fo happy and eafy a manner; I fay, what bufinefs had I to rufh into new hazards, and put myfelf upon adventures, fit only for myuth and poverty to run into.
youth and poverth thofe thoughts, I confidered
With my new engaged born, and my wife wife, one child born, and my wife then great with child of another; that Ihad noed to feek hazards for gain; that I was declining in years, and ought to think rather of leaving what I had gained, than of feeking to increafe it; that as to what my wife had faid of it's being an impulfe from Heaven, and that it hould be my duty to go, I had no notion of that; fo, after many of thefe cogitations, I fruggled with the power of my imagination, reafoned myfelf out of it, as I believe people may always do in like cafes if they will; and, in a word, I conquered it; compofed myfelf with fuch arguments as occurred to my thoughts, and which my prefent condition furnithed me plentifully with; and particularly, as the mort effectual method, I retolved to divert myfelf with other things, and to engage in fome bufinefs that might ef fectually tie me up from any more ex curfions of this kind; for I found the thing returned upon me chiefly when I was idle, had nothing to do, or any thing of moment immediately before me.

To this purpofe I bought a little farm in the county of Bedford, and
refolved to remove myfelf thither. I had a little convenient houfe upon it, and the land about it I found was capable of great improvement, and that it was many ways fuited to my inclination, which delighted in cultivating, managing, planting, and improving of land; and particularly, being an inland county, I was removed from converfing among thips, failors, and things relating to the remote parts of the world.

In a word, I went down to my farm, fettled my family, bought me ploughs, harrows, a cart, waggon, horfes, cows, fheep; and, fetting ferioufly to work, became in one halr year a mere country gentleman; my thoughts were entirely taken up in managing my fervants, cultivating the ground, invants, cultinting and I lived, clofing, planting, ar. acreeable life as I thought, the moft agreeable that nature was capable of directing, or that a man always bred to milfortunes was capable of being retreated to.

I farmed upon my own land, I had no rent to pay, was limited by no articles; I could pull up, or cut dowr, as I pleafed. What I planted was for my felf; and what I improved was for my family; and having thus left for my family; and of wandering, I off the thoughts of wandering, had not the leaft difcomfort in any part of my life, as to this worla. Now I thought, indeed, that I enjoy ed that middle itate of life, which my father fo earneftly recommended to me. A kind of heavenly life, fomeme. A kinshe is delcribed by the thing like what cies of a country poet upon the fubject of a country life:

Free from vices, free from care,
Age has no pain, and youth no inare.
But in the middle of all this felici$y$, one blow from unleen Providence unhinged me at once; and not only made a breach upon me inevitable and incurable, but drove me by it's conincurable, but dren a deep relape into the fequence, upon a deep relaple into as I wandering difpofition, which, as may fay, being born in my very blood, maon recovered it's hold of me, and, like the returns of a violent diftemper, came on with an irreffitible force upon me; fo that nothing could make any more impreftion on me. This blow was the lofs of my wife!

$$
\square \mathrm{It}
$$

$15^{8}$

## ROBINSON CRUSOE.

It is not my bufinefs here to write an elegy upon my wife, to give a character of her particular virtues, and make my court to the fex by the flattery of a funeral fermon. She was, in a few words, the fay of all my affairs, the centre of all my enterprizes; the engine, that by her prupafs I was in, me to that happy compals I was in, from the moft extravagant and ruinous project that fluttered in my head, as above; and did more to guide my rambling genius than a mother's tears, a father's infructions, a friend's counfel, or all my own reafoning powers could do. I was happy in liftening to her tears, and in being moved by her intreaties, and to the lait degree defolate and diflocated in the world by the lofs of her.
When the was gone, the world look ed aukuardly round me; I was as much a ftranger in it, in my thoughts, as I was in the Brazils, when I firft went on fhore there; and as much alone, except as to the affiftance of fervants, as I was in my ifland. I knew neither what to do, or what not to do. I faw the world bufy round me, one part labouring for bread, and the other fquandering it in vile exceffes or empty pleafures; equally miferable, from them; for the propoled fill fled every day furfeited of their vice, and heaped up work of their vice, and heaped up work for forrow and repentance; and the men of labour fpent bread itrength in daily itrugglings for they laboured winh the vital ftrength circulation of forrow, living but to work, and working but lo ling but to daily-bread were the to live; as if daily-bread were the only end of a wearifome life, and a wearifome life the only occafion of daily-bread.
This put me in mind of the life I lived in my kingdom, the ifland; where I fuffered no more corn to grow, becaufe I did not want it; and bred no more goats, becaufe I had no more ure for them; where the money lay and had ficarce the fang mildewed, upon in twenty ye favour to belooked All there
All there things, had I improved them as I ought to have done, and as
seafon and religion haved reafon and religion had dictated to me, would have taught me to fearch farfelicity and chan enjoyments for a full relicity, and that there was fomething
which certainly was the reafon and end of life, fuperior to all thefe things, which was either to be poffeffed, or at But hoped for, on this fide the grave.
But my fage counfellor was gone; I was like a flip, without a pone; that could only run afore the wind, My thoughts run all away again into the old affair; my head was quite turned with the whimfies of foreign adventures; and all the pleafing innocent amufements of my farm and my garden, my cattle and my family, which before entirely poffeffed me, were nothing to me, had no relifh, and were like mufick to one that has no ear, or food to one that has no tafte. In a word, I refolved to leave off houfekeeping, let my farm, and return to London. And in a few
months after, I did fo.

When I came to London, I was fill as uneafy as before: I had no relifh to the place, no employment in it, nothing to do but to faunter about like an idle perfon, of whom it may be faid, he is perfectly ufelefs in God's creation, and it is not one farthing matter to the reft of his kind whether he be dead or alive. This alfo was the thing, which of all circumftances of Jife was the moft my averfion, who life; and I moy days ufed to an active 'A ftate of would often fay to mylelf, - A ftate of idlenefs is the very dregs was much And, indeed, I thought I when I much more fuitably employed, deal-board.
It was now the beginning of the year 1693 , when my nephew, whom, as have obferved before, I had brougt up to the fea, and had made brought mander of a thip, was come home from a fhort voyage to Bilboa, beitig the firft he had made. He came to me and told me that fome merchants of his acquaintance had been propofing to him to go a voyage for them to the Ealt-Indies, and to China, as private traders. 'And now, uncle,' fays he, - if you will go to fea with me, I'll - engage to land you upon your old - habitation in the ifland, for we are to 6 touch at the Brazils.'
Nothing can be a greater demonftration of a future ftate, and of the the concurrence of fifible world, than the ideas of things, which we wes with
our minds, perfecty referved, world communicated to any in the world. My nephew knew nothing how far my diftemper of wandering wothing turned upon me, and I knew nothors; of what he had in his thoughts to when that very morning before he came to me, I had, in a great deal of confufion of thought, and revolving every part of my circumftances in my mind, come to this refolution; viz. that I would go to Lifbon, and confult with my old fea-captain; and 1o, if it was rational and practicable, I would go and fee the illand again, and fee what was become of my people there. I had pleafed myfelf allo with the thoughts of peopling the place, and carrying inhabitants from hence, getting a patent for the poffeffion, and I know not what; when, in the middle of all this, in comes my nephew, as I have faid, with his project of carrying me thither in his way to the Eaft-Indies.
I paufed a while at his words, and
looking fteadily at him, 'What de6 vil', faid I, 'fent you on this un6 lucky errand?' My nephew ftartled, as if he had been frighted at firft, but perceiving I was not much difpleafed with the propofal, he recovered himifelf.

- I hope it may not be an unlucky pro-

6 pofal, Sir,' fays he; 'I dare fay you 6 would be pleafed to fee your new - colony there, where you once reign6 ed with more felicity than mort of
your brother monarchs in the world. ly with my temper, that is to fay, with the prepoffeffion I was under, and of which I have faid fo much, that I told him, in few words, if he agreed with the merchants I would go with him: but I told him, I would not promife to go any farther than my own ifland. 'Why, Sir,' fays he, 'you don't - want to be left there again, I hope ? - Why,' faid I, 'can you not take - me up again in your petrible to told me, it would not be polimble to do fo; that the merchants would never allow him to come that way with a loaden thip of fuch value, it being a month's fail out of his way, and might be three or four. 'Belides, Sir, if - I fhould mifcarry,' faid he, ' and - not return at all, then you would be - were in before.

This was very rational; but we
both found out a remedy for it, which was to carry a framed floop on board the fhip, which, being taken in pieces, and fhipped on board the thip, might, by the help of fome carpenten, whom we agreed to carsy with us, be let up again in the ifland, and finifhed, fit to go to fea in a few days.

I was not long refolving : for indeed the importunities of my nephew, joined in fo effectually with iny inclination, that nothing could oppole me. On the other hand, my wife being dead, I had nobody that concerned themfelves fo much for me, as to perfuade me one way or other, except my ancient good friend the widow, who earneftly netty fruggled with me to conlider my years, my eafy circumitances, and the needlefs hazard of a long voyage; and, above all, my young children. But it was ail to no purpofe, I had an irrefiftible defire to the voyage; and I told her, I thought there was fomething fo uncommon in the impreftions I had upon my mind for the voyage, that it would be a kind of refilting Providence, if I fhould attempt to ftay at home. After which the ceafed her expoftulations; and joined with me, not only in making provifion for my voyage, but alfo in fettling my family affairs in my abfence, and providing for the education of my children.
In order to this, I made my will, and fettled the eftate $I$ had in fuch 2 manner for my children, and placed it in fuch hands, that I was perfectly in fach fatisfied they would have juf tice done them, whatever might befal me : and for their education, I left it wholly to my widow, with a fufficient maintenance to herfelf for her care All which the richly deferved; for no mother could hare raken more care in their education, or underfood it better; and as the lived till I came home, I alfo lived to thank her for it.

My nephew was ready to fail about the beginning of January, 1694-5; and I, with my man Friday, went on board, in the Downs, the 8 th, having, befides that floop which I menconed above, a very confiderable cargo of all kinds of neceflary things for my colony, which if I did not find in good condition, I refolved to find in Firft, I carried with
Firft, I carried with me fome fervants, whom I purpofed to place there as inhabitants, or at leaft, to fet on
work there upon my own account while I ftaid, and either to leave them there, or carry them forward, as they fhould appear willing; particularly carried two carpenters, a finith, a very handy ingenious fellow, who was a cooper by trade, but was alfo a general mechanick, for he was dextrous general mechanick, for he was dextrous grind coin; was a good turner, and a good pot-maker; he alfo made any thing that was proper to make of earth, or wood; in a word, we called him our ' Jack of all trades.'

With thefe I carried a taylor, who had offered himfelf to go paffenger to the Eaft-Indies with my nephew, but afterwards confented to ftay on our new plantation, and proved a moft neceffary handy fellow, as could be defived, in many other bufineffes befides that of his trade; for, as I obferved formerly, neceffity arms us for all employments.
My cargo, as near as I can recollect, for I have not kept an account of particulars, confifted of a fufficient quantity of linen, and fome thin Englifh ftuffs, for clothing the Spaniards that I expected to find there; and enough of them, as, by my calculation, might comfortably fupply them for reven years. If I remember right, the materials which I carried for cloath. ing them, with gloves, hats, fhoes, flockings, and all fuch things as they could want for wearing, amounted to above 2001 . including fome beds, bedding, and houfhold-ftuff, particularly kitchen-utenfils, with pots, kettles, pewter, brafs, \&c, befides near 100 1. more in iron-work, nails, tools of every kind, faples, hooks, hinges, and every neceffary thing I could think of.
I carried alfo, a hundred fpare arms,
ufquets and fufils, befides fome pifmufquets and fufils, befides fome piftols, a confiderable quantity of thot of all fizes, three or four tons of lead, and two pieces of brafs cannon; and becaufe I knew not what time, and what extremities I was providing for, I carried an hundred barrels of powder, befides fwords and cutlaffes, and the iron part of fome pikes and halberts ; fo that, in fhort, we had a large magazine of all forts of ftores; and I made my nephew carry two fmall quarter-deck guns more than he wanted for his dip, to leave behind,
if there was occafion ; that, when they came there, we might build a fort, and man it againft all forts of enemies : and indeed I at firlt thought there would be need enough of it all, and much more, if we hoped to maintain our poffeffion of the inland, as fhall be feen in the courfe of the fory. yoyace not fuch bad luck in this voyage as I had been ufed to meet with; and therefore fhall have the lef's occafion to interrupt the reader, who, perhaps, may be impatient to hear how matters went with my colony; yet, fome odd accidents, crofs winds, and bad weather, happened on this firf fetting out, which made the voyage longer than I expected it at firft; and I, who had never made but one voyage, (viz.my firf voyage to Guinea) in which I might be faid to come back figain, as the voyage was at firft defigned, began to think the fame ill fate fill attended me, and that I was born to be never contented with my own fliore, and yet to be always un fortunate at fea.
Contrary winds firft put us to the northward, and we were obliged to put in at Galway, in Ireland, where we Jay wind-bound two and thirty days; but we had this fatisfaetion with the difafter, that provifions were here exceeding cheap, and in the utmoft plenty; fo that while we lay here, we never touched the fhip's fores, but rather added to them. Here alfo I tools feveral hogs, and two cows with their calves, which I refolved, if I had a good paffage, to put afhore in my ifland; but we found occafion to difpofe otherwife of them.
We fet out the sth of February fiom Ireland, and had a very fair gale of wind for fome days. As I remember, it might be about the zoih of February in the evening, late, when the mate, having the watch, came into the roundhoufe, and told us, he faw a flath of fire, and heard a gun fired; and while he wastelling us of it, a boy came in, and told us the boatfwain heard another. This made us all run out upon the quarter-deck, where for a while we heard nothing; but in a few mil nutes we faw a very great light, and found that there was fome very terrible fire at a diftance. Immediately which we all agrced, that there cour in
ne no land that way in which the fire hewed itfelf, no, not for 500 leagues; for it appeared at W. N. W. Upon this, we concluded it muft be fome fhip on fire at fea; and as by our hearing the noife of guns juft before, we concluded it could not be far off, we food directly towards it, and were prefently fatisfied we fhould difcover it, becaufe the farther we failed, the greater the light appeared, though the weather being hazy, we could not perceive any thing but the light for a while. In about half an hour's failins, the wind being fair for us, though ing, the wind being the weather clearnot much of it, and the weather clearing up a little, we could plainly difcern that it was a great fhip on fire in the middle of the fea. I was moft fenfibly touched with this difafter, though not at all acquainted with the perfons engaged in it. I prefently recollected my former circumftances, in what condition I was in when taken up by the Portugueze captain; and how much more deplorable the circumftances of the poor creatures belonging to the thip muft be, if they had no other thip in company with them. Upon this, I immediately ordered that five guns Should be fired, one foon after another, that, if poffible, we might give notice to them that there was help for them at hand, and that they might endeavour to lave themmel for though we could fee the flame in could fee nothing of us.
We lay by fome time upon this, only driving as the burning fip drove, waiting for day-light; when on a fudden, to our great terror, though we had reafon to expect it, the flip blew up in the air, and immediately, (that is to fay, in a few minutes) all the fire was out; that is to fay, the reft of the fhip funk. This was terrible, and indeed an afflicting fight, for the fake of the poor men, who, I concluded, muft be either all deftroyed in the fhip, or be in the utmoft diftreis in their boats in the middle of the ocean, which, at prefent, by reafon it was dark, I could not fee: however, to direct them as well as I could, I caufed lights to be hung out in all the parts of the fhip where we could, and which we had lanthorns for, and kept firing guns all the night long; letting them know by this, that there was a fhip not far off:

About eight o'clock in the morning, we difcovered the fhip's boats, by the help of our perfpective-glaffes; and found there were two of them, both thronged with people, and deep in the water. We perceived they rowed, the wind being againit them; that they wind being agand did the utmoft to faw our fhip, and did the utmolt to make us fee them.

We immediately fpread our ancient, to let them know we faw them; and hung a waft out, as a fignal for them to come on board; and then made more fail, ftanding direetly to them. In a little more than half an hour, we came up with them; and, in a word, took them all in, being no lefs than fixty-four men, women, and children; for there were a great many paffengers. Upon the whole, we found it was a Upon the whole, hip of 300 tons, French merchant- thip of 300 tons, homeward-bound from Quebec, in the river of Canada. The mafter gave us a long account of the diftrefs of his fhip, how the fire began in the fteerage, by the negligence of the fteerfman ; but, on his crying out for help, was, as every body thought, entirely put out. But they foon found, that fome fparks of the firtt fire had gotten into fome part of the fhip, fo difficult to come at, that they could not effectually quench it ; and afterwards geting in between the timbers, and withing in between the timbers, and wected in the cieling of the thip, it proceeded into the hold, and matered an the kill and all the application they were able to exert.
They had no more to do then, but to get into their boats, which, to their great comfort, were pretty large; being their long-boat, and a great thallop, befides a fmall fkiff, which was of no great fervice to them, other than to get fome frefh water and provifions into her, after they had fectured themfelves from the fire. They had indeed fmall hope of their lives by getting into thefe boats at that diftance from any land; only, as they faid well, that they were efcaped from the fire, and had a poffibility that fome fip might happen to be at fea and might take them in. They had fails, oars, and a compafs, and were preparing to make the beft of their way to Newfoundland, the wind blowing pretty fair; for it blew an eafy gale at S.E. by E. They had as much provifions and water, as, with fparing it fo as to be next door to $X$ ftarving
ftarving, might fupport them about twelve days; in which, if they had no bad weather, and no contrary winds, the captain faid, he hoped he might get to the Banks of Newfoundland, and might perhaps take fome filh to fuftain them till they might go on fhore. But there were fo many chances. againft them in all thefecafes; fuch as fiforms to overfet and founder them; rains and cold to benumb and perifa their limbs; contrary winds to keep. them out and farve them; that it mulf. have been next to miraculous if they had efcaped.

In the midft of their confultations, every one being hopelefs and ready to defpair, the captain with tears in his eyes told me, they were on a fudden furprized with the joy of hearing a gun fire, and after that four more; thefe were the five gans which I caufed to be fired at firft feeing the light: this revived their hearts, and gave them the notice, which, as above, I defigned it Mould, viz. that there was a fhip at hand for their help.

It was upon the bearing thefe guns that they took down their mafts and fails; and the found coming from the windward, they refolved to lie by till morning. Some time after this, hearing no more guns, they fired three mufquets, one a confiderable while after another; but thefe, the wind being contrary, we never heard.
Some time after that again, they were fill more agreeably furprized with feeing our lights, and hearing the guns, which, as I have faid, I caufed to be fired all the reft of the night; this fet them to work with their oars to keep their boats a-head, at leaif that we might the fooner come up, with them; and at laft, to cheir inexpreffible joy, they found we faw them.

It is impoffible for me to exprefs the feveral geftures, the ftrange extafies, the variety of poftures, which thefe poor delivered perple run into, to exprefs the joy of their fouls at fo unexpected a deliverance: grief and fear are eafily defcribed; fighs, tears, groans, and a very few motions of head and hands, make up the furn of it's variety; but an excefs of joy, a furprize of joy, has a thoufand extravagancies in it: there were fome in tears, fome raging and tearing themfelves, as if they had been in the greateft agonies
of forrow; fome fark raving and downe right lunatick; fome ran about the fhip flamping with their feet, others wringing their hands; fome were dancing, feveral finging, fome laughing, more crying; many quite dumb, not able to fpeak a word; others fick and vomiting; feveral fwooning, and ready to faint; and a fews were croffing themfeves and giving God thanks.

I would not wrong them neither; there might be many that were thankful afterward; but the paffion was too frong for them at finft, and they were not able to mafter it: they were thrown into extafies and a kind of frenzy, and fo there were but a very few who were compofed and ferious in their joy.
Perhaps allo the cafe may have fome addition to it, from the particular circumftance of the nation they belonged to ; I. mean, the French, whofe temper is allowed to be more volatile, more paffionate, and more fprightly, and their fpirits more fluid, than of other nations. I am not philofopher enough to determine the caufe, but nothing I had ever feen before came up to it : the extafies poor Friday, my trufty favage, was in, when he found his father in the boat, came the neareft to it ; and the:furprize of the mafter; and his two companions, whom I delivered from the two villains that fet them on fhore in the inland, came a little. way towards it; but nothing was to compare to this, either that I faw in Friday, or any where elfe in my life. It is farther obfervable, that thefe extravagancies did not fhew themfelves in that different manner I have mentioned, in different perfons only; but all the variety voould appear in a fhort fucceffion of moments in one and the fame perfon. A man that we faw this minute dumb, and, as it were, fupid and confounded, fhould the next mi-, nute be dancing and hallooing like an antick; and the next moment a tearing his hair, or pulling his cloaths to pieces, and ftamping them under his feet like a madman; a few minutes after that, we fhould have him all in tears, then fick, then fwooning; and had not immediate lelp been had, would, in a few moments more, have been dead: and thus it was, not with one or two, or ten or twenty, but with the greatelt part of them; and, if I remember right, our furgeon was
obliged

## obliged to let above thirty of them <br> and that, next to his Maker, he would give me thanks alfo.

 blood.There were two priefts among them, one an old man, and the other a young man; and that which was frangelt mas, that the oldeft man was the worft. As foon as he fet his foot on board our flip, and faw himfelf fafe, he dropped down ftone-dead, to all appearance ; not the leaft fign of life could be perceived in him: our furreon immediately applied proper remedies to recover him, and was the only man in the flip that believed he was not dead ; and at length he opened a vein in his arm, having firft chafed and rubbed the part, fo as to warm it as much as pofitble; upon this the blood, which only dropped at fitt, flowed fomething freely; in three minutes after the man opened and about a quarter of an hour after that he fooke, grew better, and in a little time quite well; after the blood was fopped, he walked about, told us he was perfectly well, took a dram of cordial which the furgeon gave him, himfelf. A borut a quarter of an hout after this, they came running into the cabin to the furgeon, who was bleed ${ }^{2}$ ing a French woman that had fainted, and told liim the prieft was gone ftark mad. It feems he had began to pevolve the change of his circumitances in his mind, and this put him into an extafy of joy; his fpirts whirled about fafter than the veffels could convey them; the blood grew hot and feverifh; and the man was as fit for Bedfam, as any creature that ever was in it the furgeon would not bleed him again in that condition, but gave him fomething to doze and put him to fleep, which, after fome time, operated upon him, and he waked next morning perfectly compofed and well.
The younger prieft hehaved himfelf with great command of his paffion, and was really an example of a ferious well-governed mind. At his firft comfat on his face, proffrating himfelf in thankfulnels for his ideliverance; in which I unhappily and unfeafonably difturbed him, really thinking he kad been in a fwoon; but he fpake calmly, thanked me, told me he was giving God thanks for his deliverance; begGod thanks for his delivera mo to leave him a few mornts,

I was heartily forry that I difturbed him; and not only left him, but kept others from interrupting him alfo. He continued in that pofture about three minutes, or a little more, after 1 left him ; then came to me as he had faid he would and with a great deal of he would, and with a gre levioulnets and affection, me, that tears in his cyes, thanked me, the had, under God, given him and lo many miferable creatures their lives. I told him, I had no room to mover him to thank God for me, for I had feen that he had done that already; but I added, that it was nothing but what reafon and humanity dictated to all men, and that we had as much reafon as he to give thanks to God, who had bleffed us fo far as to make us the inftruments of his mercy to fo many of his creatures.
After this, the young prieft applied Aimfelf to lis country-folks, laboured to compofe them; purfuaded, intreated, argued, reafoned with them, and did his utmoft to keep them within the exercife of their reafon; and with fome he had fuccefs, though bthers were, for a time, out of all government of themfelves.
I cannot help committing this to writing, as perhaps it may be ufeful to thole into whofe hands it may falls, in the guidingothemfelves in all the ore travagancies of their paffions; fowis. an excefsi of joy can carry men outt ta fuch a length beyond the xeach of their reafon, what will not the extravagancies ${ }^{1}$ of angeryarage, and a provoked mind, carry us to! And, endiced, here I faut reafon for keeping am exs ceeding watchover our paffions of eve ry kind, as well thole of joya and fatisfaction, as thofe of forrow and anger. $\qquad$ ar. Fin sta to 315
hye were fomething kliforderech byt thele extravagancies among bull inewd guefts for the finft day; but when they bad been retired, lodgings yprofidedf for them as well as oupthip warad ale: low, and they hadflept heaitily, bs minoft of them did, being fatigued and fifight $t$ ened, they were cuite anothers fortion people the next day.
Notbing of good manners, or civib, acknowledgments for the kinisefs frewn them was wanting ; the Fuendlow it is known, are-naturally apienougk to it is known,
exseed that way. The captain and one of the priefts came to me the next day; and, defiring to fpeak with me and my nephew, began to confult with us what fhould be done with them; and firft they told us, that, as we had fared their lives, fo all they had was little enough for a return to us for the kindnefs received. The captain faid, they had faved fome money, and fome things of value in their boats, catched haftily out of the flames; and if we would accept it, they were ordered to make an offer of it all to us; they only defired to be fet on fhore fomewhere in our way, where, if poflible, they might get a paffage to France.
My nephew was for accepting their money at firtt word, and to confider what to do with them afterwards: but I over-ruled him in that part; for I knew what it was to be fet on fhore in a ftrange country; and if the Portugal captain, that took me up at fea, had ferved me fo, and took all I had for my deliverance, I muft have ftarved, or have been as much a flave at the Brazils as I had been at Barbary, the being fold to a Mahometan onlyex cepted; and perhaps a Portugueze is not a much better mafter than a Turk, if not, in fome cafes, a much worfe,

I therefore told the French captain, that we had taken them up in their diftrefs it was true; but that it was our duty to do fo, as we were felluwcreatures, and as we would defire to be fo delivered if we were in the like or any other extremity; that we had done nothing for them but what we believed they would have done for us, if we had been in their cafe and they in ours; but that we took them up to ferve them not to plunder them; and that it would be a moft barbarous thing to take that little from them which they had faved out of the fire, and then fet them on fhore and leave them; that this would be firft to fave them from death, and then kill them ourfelves; fave them from drowning, and then abandon them to flarving; and therefore I would not let the leaft thing be taken from them. As to fetting them on fhore, I told them, indeed, that was an exceeding difficulty to us, for that the Chip was bound to the Eaft-Indies; and though we were driven gut of our courfe to the weftward a very great way, which perhaps was directed by Heaven on pur-
pofe for their deliverance, yet it was impoffible for us wilfully to change our voyage on this particular account; nor could my nephew, the captain, anfwer it to the freighters, with whom he was under charter-party to purlue his voyage by the way of Brazil; and all I knew he could do for them was, to put ourfelves in the way of meeting with other fhips homeward-bound from the Welt-Indies, and get them paffage, if poffible, to England or France.

The firft part of the propofal was fo generous and kind, they could not but be very thankful for it; but they were in a great conffernation, efpecially the paffengers, at the notion of being carried away to the Eaft-Indies. They then intreated me, that feeing I was driven fo far to the weftward before I met with them, I would at leaft keep on the fame courfe to the Banks, of Newfoundland, where it was poffible I might meet with fome flip or floop that they might hire to carry them back to Canada, from whence they came.

I thought this was but a reafonable requeff on their part ${ }_{3}$ and therefore $I$ inclined to agree to it; for indeed I confidered, that to carry this whole company to the Ealt-Indies, would not only be an intolerable feverity to the poor people, but would be ruining our whole voyage by devouring all our provifions; lo I thought it no breach of charter-party, but what an unforefeen accident made abfolutely neceffary to us, and in which no one could fay we were to blame; for the laws of God and nature would have forbid that we thould refufe to take up two boats full of people in fuch a diftreffed condition $;$ and the nature of the thing, as well refpecting ourfelves as the poor people, obliged us to fee them on fhore fomewhere or other for their detiverance: fo I confented that we would carry them to Newfoundland, if wind and weather would permit; and, if not, that I would carry them to Martinico, in the Weit-Indies.
The wind continued frefh eafferly, but the weather pretty good; and as if had blowed continually in the points between N.E. and S.E. a long time, we miffied feveral opportunities of fending them to France; for we met feveral hips bound to Europe, whereof two were French, from St. Chriftopher's
pher's; but they had been fo long beating up againft the wind, that they durft take in no paffengers for fear of wanting provifions for the voyage, as well for themfelves as for thole they Thould take in; fo we were obliged to go on. It was about a week after this, that we made the Banks of Newfoundland; where, to fhorten my ltory, we put all our French people on board a bark, which they bired at fea there, to put them on fhore, and afterwards to carry them to France, if they could get provifion to vi\&ual themfelves with. When I fay all the French went on Shore, I fhould remember, that the young prieft I fpoke of, hearing we were bound to the Eaft-Indies, defired to go the voyage with us, and to be fet on fhore on the coalt of Coromandel : I readily agreed to that; for I wonderfully liked the man, and had very good reafon, as will appear afterwards; allo four of the feamen enter ed themfelves in our hip, and proved very ufeful fellows.

From hence we directed our courfe for the Weft-Indies, fleering away S. and S. by E. for about twenty days together, fometimes little or no winc at all, when we met with another fubject for our humanity to work upon, almoft as deplorable as that before.
It was in the latitude of twenty-feven degrees, five minutes N . and the $19^{\text {th }}$ day of March, $1694-5$, when we efpied a fail, our courfe S.E. and by S. We foon perceived it was a large veffel, and that fhe bore up to us; but could not at firft know what to make of her, till after coming a little nearer, we found fhe had loft her main top-maft, foremaft, and boltfprit; and prefently fhe fires a gun as a fignal of diftrefs : the weather was pretty good, wind at N.N.W. a frefh gale, and we foon came to fpeak with her.

We found her a thip of Brifol, bound home from Barbadoes, but had been blown out of the road at Barbadoes, a few days before the was ready to fail, by a terrible hurricane, while the captain and chief mate were both gone on fhore; fo that befide the terfor of the form, they were but in an indifferent cale for good artifts to bring the fhip home: they had been already nine weeks at fea, and had met with another terrible ftorm after the hurricane was over, which had blown them
quite out of their knowledge to the weftward, and in which they ioft their mafts, as above. They told us, they expected to have feen the Bahama iflands, but were then driven away again to the fouth-eaft, by a ftrong gale of wind at N.N.W. the fame that blew now, and having no fails to work the fhip with, but a main-courfe, and a kind of fquare fail upon a jury-foremaft, which they had fet up, they could not lie near the wind, but were endeavouring to ftand away for tie $\mathrm{Ca}-$ naries.

But that which was worft of all was, that they were almoft ttarved for want of provifions; befides the fatigues they had undergone, their bread and flefh was quite gone, they had not an ounce left in the mip, and had had none for eleven days ; the only relief they had was, their water was not all fpent, and they had about half a barrel of flour left; they had fugarenough fome fuccades or fweetmeats they had at firf, but they were devoured ; and they had feven carks of rum.
There was a youth and his mother, and a maid-fervant, on board, who were going paffengers, and thinking the fhip was ready to fail, unhappily came on board the evening before the hurricane began; and, having no provifions of their own left, they were in a more deplorable condition than the refl; for the feamen, being reduced to fuch an extreme neceffity themfelves, had no compafion, we may be fure, for the poor paffengers; and they were, indeed, in fuch a condition, that their milery is very hard to defcribe.

I had, perhaps, not known this part, if my curiofity had not led me, the weather being fair, and the wind abated, to go on board the fhip. The fecond mate, who upon this occafion commanded the fhip, had been on board our fhip; and he told me, indeed, that they had three palfengers in the great cabin, that they were in a deplorable condition: ' Nay,' fays he, - I believe they are dead, for I have - heard nothing of them for above two 6 days; and I was afraid to enquire 6 after them, for I had nothing to re6 lieve thent with.

We immediately applied ourfelves to give them what relief we could fpare; and indeed I had to far over-ruled things with my nephew, that I sould
have vietualled them, though we had gone away to Virginia, or any part of the coalt of America, to have fupplied ourfelves; but there was no neceflity for that.
But now they were in a new danger; for they were aftaid of eating too much, even of that little we gave them. The mate or commander brought fix men with him in his boat; but thefe poor wretches looked like fkeletons, and were fo weak, they could hardly fit to their oars : the mate himfelf was very ill, and half-ftarved; for he declaved he had referved nothing from the men, and went thare and Sbare alike with them in every bit they etat.
I cautioned him to eat fpalingly, but fet meat before him immediately, and he had noteeaten three mouthfuls before he began to be fick and out of order; fo he ftopped a while, and our furgeon mixed him up fomething with fome broth, which he faid would be to him both food and pliyfick; and after he had taken it, he grew better: in the mean time, I forgot not the men; I ordered victuals to be given them, and the poof creatures rather devoured than eat it; they were fo exceeding hungry, that they were in a manner ravenous, and had no command of themfelves; and two of them eat with fo much greedinefs, that they were in daniger of their lives the next morning.
The tight of the ee people's difters was very moving to me, and brought to mind what I had at errible profpect of at my firt coming on fhore in my ifland, where I had not the leaft mouthful of food, or any hopes of procuring it; befides the houly apprehenfion 1 had of being made the food of dether creatures. But all the while the mate was thus relating to me the miferable condition of the thip's comparym-I could not put out of my thought the fory he had told me of the three poor creatures in the great cabin; viz. the mother, her lont, and the maid-fervant, whom he had heard nothing of for two or three days; and whom he feemed to confefs they had wholly neglected, thein own extremities being fo great; by which I underftood, that they had really given them no food at all, and that therefore they muft be perifhed, and be all lying dead perhaps on the floor or deck of the cabin.

As I therefore kept the mate, whom we then called captain, on board with his men to refrefl them, fo I alfo forgot not the fraving crew that were left on board, but ordered my own boat to go on board the fhip, and with my mate and twelve men to carry them a fack of bread, and four or five pieces of beef to boil. Our furgeon charged the men to caufe the meat to be boiled while they ftayed, and to keep guard in the cook-room, to prevent the gen's taking it to eat raw, or taking it ont of the pot before it was well boiled, and then to give every man but a little at a time : and by this caution hepree ferved the men, who would otherwire have killed themfelves with that very food that wats given them on puepole to fave theirlives.
At the fane time, I ordered: the mate to go into the great cabing and fee in what condition the poor pafferigers were in; and, if they were alive, to comfort them, and give them what refrefhment was proper; and the furgeon gave him a large pitcher with fome of the prepared broth which he had given the mate that was on board, and which he did not queftion would reftore them gradually.
I was not fatisfied with this; but, as I faid above, having a great mind to fee the feene of mifery, whifolt I knew the Mhip itfelf would prefent me with, in a'more dively manner than I could have it by report, I took the cap tain of the flip, as we now called him, with me, and wient myfelf a little after in their boat lown or 3
I found the poor men on board almoft in a tumple to get the victuals out of the boiler before it was ready? But my mate obferved his order, and kept a good guard at the cook-room door; and the man the placed there, after ufing all poffible perfuafion to have patierice, kept them off by force: however, he caufed fome bifcuit cakes to be dipped in the pot, and foftenied them with the liquor of the meat, which they call brewis, and gave them every one one, to ftay their fomachs; and told them it was for their own fafety that he was obliged to give them but littleat a time. But it was all in vain, and had I not come on board, and their own commander and officers with me, and with good wor l , and fome threats alfo of giving them no
more,
more, I believe they would have broke and he began fenfibly to revive; though
more, I believe they into the cook-room by force, and tore into the cook-room by force, and tore
the meat out of the fuenace; for words, indeed, are of a very finall force to a hungry belly. However, we pacified them, and fed therm gradually and cautioully for the firft time, and the next time gave them more, and at laft filled their bellies, and the men did well enough.

But the mifery of the poor paffengers in the cabin was of another nature, and far beyond the reft; for as, firft, the fhip's company had fo little for themfelves, it was but too true, that they had at firlt kept them very low, and at laft totally neglected them; fo that for fix or feven days, it might be faid, they had really had no food at all, and for feveral days before very little.

The poor mother, who, as the firft mate reported, was a woman of good fenfe and good breeding, had fpared all fhe could get fo affectionately for her fon, that at laft fhe entirely funk under it; and when the mate of our fhip went in, fhe fat upon the floor or deck, with her back up againft the fides, between two chairs, which were lafhed faft, and her head funk in between her fhoulders, like a corpfe, though not quite dead. My mate faid all he could to revive and encourage her, and with a fpoon put fome broth into her mouth. She opened her lips, and lifted up one hand, but could not fpeak; yet fhe underitood what he faid, and made figns to him, intimating, that it was too late for her; but pointed to her child, as if the would have faid, they fhould take care of him.
However, the mate, who was exceedingly moved with the fight, endeavoured to get fome of the broth into her mouth; and, as he faid, got two or three fpoonfuls down, though I queftion whether he could be fure of it or not: but it was too late, and me died the fame night.

The youth, who was preferved at the price of his moft affectionate mother's life, was not fo far gone; yet he lay in a cabin-bed as one ftretched out, with hardly any life left in him: he had a piece of an old glove in his mouth, having eaten up the reft of it; however $r_{b}$ being young, and having more ftrength than his mother, the tatate got fomething down his throat,
by giving him, fome time after, two or three fpoonfuls extraordinary, he was very fick, and brought it up again.
But the next care was the poor maid. She lay all along upon the deok hard by her miftrefs, and jult like one that had fallen down with an apoplexy, and Aruggled for lifes , her limbs were diftorted; owe of her hands was clafped round the frame of one chair, and the griped it fo hard that we could not eafily make her let it go ; her other arm lay over her head, and her feet lay both together, fet faft againft the frame of the cabin-table; in thort, "the lay juft like one in the laft agonies of death, and yet fhe was alive too.

The poor creature was not only farved with hunger, and terrified with the thoughts of death, but, as the mentold us afterwards, was broken-hearted for her miftress, whom the faw dying two or three days before, and whom fhe loved moft tenderly.

We knew not what to do with this poor girl ; for when our furgeon, whowas a man of very great knowledge and experience, and with great appication recovered her as to life, he hadher upon his hand as to her fenfes; for the was little lefs than diftracted for a confiderable time after, as fhall appear prefently.

Whoever fhall read thefe memorandums, muft be defired to confider, that vifits at fea are not like a journey into the country, where fometimes people ftay a week or a fortnight at a place. Our bufinefs was to relieve this diltreffed fhip's crew, but not lie by for them; and though they were willing to fteer the fame courfe with us for fome days, yet we could carry no fail to keep pace with a fhip that had na mafts. However, as their captain beged of us to help him to fet up a main-top-maft, and a kind of top-maft to his jury-fore-mait, we did, as it were, lie by him for three or four days; and then having given him five barrels of beef and pork, two hogfheads of bifcuit, and a proportion of peas, flour, and what other things we could fpare; and taking three calks of fugar, and fome rum, and fome pieces of eight of them for fatisfaction, we left them; taking on board with us, at their own
earneft requeft, the youth and the maid, and all their goods.

The young lad was about feventeen years of age, a pretty, well-bred, modeft, and fenfible youth; greatly dejected with the lofs of his mother, and, as it feems, had loft his father but a few months before at Barbadoes. He bew med of the furgeon to fpeak to me, begged of the furgeon to peak to me, to take him out of the hip; for he faid, the cruel fellows had murdered his mother ; and, indeed, fo they had, that is to fay, paffively; for they might have fpared a fmall fuftenance to the poor helplefs widow, that might have poor hetpled her life, though it had been preferved her life, though it had been jult to keep her alive. But hunger knows no friend, no relation, no juftice, no right; and therefore is remorfelefs, and capable of no compaffion.
The furgeon told him how far we were going ; and how it would carry him away from all his friends, and put him, perhaps, in as bad circumfances almoft as we found them in; that is to fay, farving in the world. He faid it mattered not whither he went, if he was but delivered from the terrible crew that he was among : that the captain (by which he meant me, for he could know nothing of my nephew) had faved his life, and he was fure would not hurt him; and as for the maid, he was fure, if the came to herfelf, the would be very thankful for it, let us carry them whither we would. The furgeon reprefented the cafe fo affectionately to me, that I yielded; and we took them both on board, with all their goods, except eleven hogTheads of fugar, which could not be removed or come at ; and as the youth had a bill of lading for them, I made his commander fign a writing, oblig. ing him to go, as foon as he came to Britor, to one LVir. Rogers, a merchant there, to whom the youth faid he was related, and to deliver a lette which I wrote to him, and all the goods he had belonging to the deceafed wi dow ${ }_{j}$ which I fuppofe was not done for I could never learn that the firip came to Brittol, but was, as is mol probable, loft at fea, being in fo difabled a condition, and fo far from any land, that I am of opinion, the fiult ftorm fhe met with afterwavds fhe might founder in the fea; for the was
leaky, and had damage in her hote when I met with her.
I was now in the latitude of 19 degrees 32 minutes, and had hitherto had a tolerable voyage as to weather, though at firf the winds hiad Been contrary. I fhall trouble nobody with the little incidents of wind, weather, currents; \&sc. on the telt of our voyage; but, fhortening my fory for the fake of what is to follow, fhall obferve, that I came to my old habitation, the ifland, on the roth of April, 1695. It was with no fmall difficulty that I found the place; for as I came to it, and went from it before, on the fouth and eaft-fide of the ifland, as coming from the Brazils, fo now coming in between the main and the ifland; and having no chart for the coaft, nor any land-mark, I did not know it whens I faw it, or know whether I faw it or no.

We beat about a great while, and went on flore on feveral inands in the mouth of the great River Oroonoque, but none for my purpofe; only this I learned by my coafting the fliore, that I was under one great miftake before, viz, that the continent which I thought faw from the ifland I lived in, was really no continent, but a long ifland, or rather a ridge of iflands, reaching from one to the other fide of the extended mouth of that great river; and that the favages who came to my ifland, were not properly thofe which we call Caribbees, but inlanders, and other barbarians of the fame kind, who inhabited fomething nearer to our fide than the reff.
In fhort, I vifited feveral of the flands to no purpofe; fome I found were inhabited, and fome were not. On one of them I found fome Spza niards, and thouglite they had lived there ; but, fpeaking with them, found they had a floop lay in a fmall creek hard by, and that they came thither to make falt, and catch fome pearl-muffels if they could, but they belonged to the Iffe de Trinidad, which lay farther north, in the latitude of ro and 11 degrees.
Thus coafting from one ifland to another, fometimes with the flip, fometimes with the Frenchman's flallop, (which we had found a convenient boat, and therefore kept her with their very
good will) at lengitl I came fair on the fouth-fide of my ifland, and I prefently knew the very countenance of the place; foI Ibrought the Mip fafe to an anchor, broadfode with the little creek where was iny oid habitation.
As foon as I faw the place, I called for Friday, and alked him if he knew where he was. He looked abont a tittle, and prefently clapping his hands, cried, 'O yes! O there! O yes! O - there! polinting to our old habitation, and fell a dancing and capering like a mad fellow; and I had much do to keep him from unping into the fea, to fwim athore to the place.
' Well, Friday,' faid I, ' do you - think we fhall find any body here or 6 no? And what do you think, thall - we fee yourfather?' The fellow ftood mute as a flock a good while; but when I named his father, the poor affectionate creature looked dejected; and I could fee the tear's run. down his face very plentifully. © What is the - matter, Friday?' faid I. 'Are you - troubled becaufe you may fee your - fathere'- No, no, ${ }^{2}$ fays he, fhaking his head, ${ }^{6}$ no fee him more, no - ever more fee again.- 'Why fo, faid I, 'Friday'? How do you know ' that?'-K O'no! O no!' fays Friday - he long ago die; long ago, he much 6 old man'-6 Well, well, lata I - Friday, you don't know. But hal - we fee anyone elfe then?' The fellow, it feems, - had better eyes than 1 , and he points juft to the hill above my old houfe; and though we lay half a league off, he cries out, Me fee! me fee! 6 yes yes me fee much man there - and there, and there.' I looked, but I could fee nobody, no, not with a perfpective-glafs; which was, I fuppofe, becaufe I could not hit the place; for the fellow was right, as I found upon enquiry the next day, and there were five or fix men all together ftood to look at the fhip, not knowing what to think of us.
As foon as Friday had told me he faw people, I caufed the Englifh ancient to be fpread, and fired three guns, to give them notice we were friends; and about half a quarter of an hour after, we perceived a fmoke rife from the fide of the creek; fo I immediately ordered a boat out, taking Friday with me; and, hanging out a white flag, or a flag of truce, I went direstly on
flore, taking with me the young friar Imentioned, to whom I had told the whole ftory of my living there, and the manner of it, and every particular, both of ${ }^{+}$myfelf and thofe that I left there; and who was, on that accoun?, extremely defirous to go with me. We had beffdes about fixteen men very well armed, if we had found any new oueft there which we did not know of; but we had no need of weapons.

As we went on fhore upon the tide of flood, near high water, we rowed directly into the creek; and the firft man I fixed my eye upon was the Spaniard whote life 1 had faved, and whom I knew by his face perfectly well; as to his habit, Ifhall defcribe it afterwards. I ordered nobody to go on thore at firft but myfelf, but there was no keeping Friday in the boat; for the affectionate creature had fpied his father at a diftance, a good way ofr of the Spaniards, where indeed I faw nothing of him; and if they had not let him go or flore, he would have junnped into the fea. He was no fooner on fhore, but he flew away to his fathei like an arrow out of a bow. It would have made any man ffied tears, in fpite of the firmeft refolution, to have feen the firft tranfports of this poor fellow's joy when he came to his father; hovy tre embraced him, kiffed him, troaked his face, took him up in his arms, fe him down upon a tree, and lay down by him; then food and looked at hims as any one would look at a ftrange pieture, for a quarter of an hour toget ther; then lay down upon the ground and Itroaked his legs, and kiffed them and then got up again, and ftared at him: one would have thought the fellow bewitched. But it would have made a dog laugh to fee how the next day his paffion ran out another way. In the morning he walked along the fhore, to-and-again, with his father, feveral hours, always leading him by the hand, as if he had been a lady; and every now and then would come to fetch fomething ar other for him to the boat, either a lump of fugar, or a dram? a bifcuit, or fomething or other that was good. In the afternoon his follies ran another way; for then he would fet the old man down upon the ground, and dance about him, and made a thouland antick poitures and geftures; and all the while he did this, he would be
talking
talking to him, and telling him one ftory or another of his travels, and of what had happened to him abroad, to divert him. In fhort, if the fame filial affection was to be found in Chrittians to their parents, in our parts of the world, one would be tempted to fay, there hardly would have been any need of the fifth commandment.

But this is a digreflion. I return to my landing. It would be endlefs to take notice of all the ceremonies and civilities that the Spaniards received me with. The firft Spaniard, whom, as I faid, I knew very well, was he whofe life I faved. He came towards the boat, attended by one more, carrying a flag of truce alifo; and he did not only not know me at firlt, but he had no thoughts, no notion of it's being me that was come, till I fpoke to him. 6 Signior,' faid I, in Portugueze, 'do © you not know me?' At which he fpoke not a word; but, giving his mufquet to the man that was with him, threw his arms abroad, and faying fomething in Spanifh, that I did not perfectly hear, came forward, and embraced me, telling me he was inexcufable not to know that face again, that he had once feen, as of an angel from heaven, fent to fave his life. He faid abundance of very handfome things, as a well-bred Spaniard always knows how; and then beckoning to the perfon that attended him, bade him go and call out his comrades. He then akked me, if I would walk to my old habitation, where he would give me poffeffion of my own houfe again, and where I thould fee there had been but mean improvements. So I walked along with him; but, alas! I could no more find the place again, than if I had never been there; for they had planted fo many trees, and placed them in fuch a potture, fo thick and clofe to one another, in ten years time they were grown fo big, that, in fhort, the place was inacceffible, except by fuch windings and blind ways, as they themfelves only who made them could find.

I afked them what put them upon all thefe fortifications. He told me, I would fay there was need enough of it, when they had given an account how they had paffed their time fince their arriving in the ifland, efpecially after they had the misfortune to find that

I was gone. He told me he could net but have fome fatisfaction in my good fortune, when he heard that I was gone in a good fhip, and to my fatiffaction; and that he had oftentimes a frong perfuafion, that one time or other he fhould fee me again. But nothing that ever befel him in his life, he faid, was fo furprizing and afflicting to him at firft, as the difappointment he was under when he came back to the ifland, and found I was not there.

As to the three barbarians (fo he called them) that were left behind, and of whom he faid he had a long Etory to tell me, the Spaniards all thought themfelves much better among the favages, only that their number was fo fmall. 'And,' fays he, 'had they - been ftrong enough, we had been all 'long ago.in purgatory !' and with that he croffed himfelf upon the breaft. 'But, Sir', fays he, 'I hope you will - not be difpleafed, when I fhall tell 6 you how, forced by neceffity, we 6 were obliged, for our own preferva6 tion, to difarm them, and make - them our fubjects, who would not 6 be content with being moderately our 6 mafters, but would be our murderers. I anfwered, I was heartily afraid of it when I left them there; and nothing troubled me at my parting from the illand, but that they were not come back, that I might have put them in poffeffion of every thing firf, and left the others in a ftate of fubjection, as they deferved : but if they had reduced them to it, I was very glad, and thould be very far from finding any fault with it; for I knew they were a parcel of refractory ungovernable villains, and were fit for any manner of mifchief.

While I was faying this, came the man whom he had fent back, and with him eleven men more. In the drefs they were in, it was impoffible to guefs what nation they were of; but he made all clear both to them and to me. Firft, he turned to me, and pointing to them, faid, "Thefe, - Sir, are fome of the gentlemen who 6 owe their lives to you.? And then turning to them, and pointing to me, he let them know who I was; upon which they all came up one by one, not as if they had been failors and ordinary fellows, and I the like, but
really

Teally as if they had been ambaffa- was gone, but to find three ftrangers dors or noblemen, and I a monarch left on the ipot, pollefled of all that dors or a great conqueror. Their behavi- I had left behind me, which or was to the laft degree obliging and courteous, and yet mixed with a manly, majeftick gravity, which very well became them ; and, in fhort, they had fo much more manners than $I$, that I farce knew how to receive their civilities, much lefs how to return them in kind.

The hiftory of their coming to and conduct in the ifland, after my going away, is fo remarkable, and has many incidents, which the former part of my relation will help to undertand, and which will, in moft of the particulars, refer to that account but comalre them with reat delight to the reading of thofe that come after me. I fhall no longer trouble the fory with a relation in the firf perfon, which will put me to the expence of ten thoufand faid I's, and faid be's, and be told me's, and I told bim's, and the like; but I fhall collect the facts hiftorically, as near as I can gather them out of my memory from what they related to me, and from what I met with in my converfing with them, and with the place.
In order to do this fuccinctly, and es intelligibly as I can, I muft go back to the circumitance in which I left the ifland, and which the perfons were in of whom I am to fpeak. At firft it is neceflary to repeat, that away Friday's father and the Spaniard, the two whofe lives 1 had refcued from the favages; I fay, I had fent them away in a large canoe to the main (as I then thought it) to fetch over the Spaniard's companions whom he had left behind him, in order to fave them from the like calamity that he had been in; and in order to fuccour them for the prefent, and that, if poffible, we might together find fome way for our deliverance afterward.
When I fent them away, I had no vifible appearance of, or the leaft room to hope for my own deliverance, any more than I had twenty years before; much lefs had I any foreknowledge of what after happened; I mean, of an Englifh fhip coming on fhore there to fetch them off; and it could not but be a very great furprize to them, when they same back, not only to find that I

The firft thing, however, which I enquired into, that I might begin where I left off, was of their own part, and I defired he would give me particular account of his voyage back to his countrymen with the boat, when fent him to feth them over, He told me there was little variety in that part; for nothing remarkable happened to them on the way, they having very calm weather and a having very cal his countrymen, it finooth fea; for his countrymen, it could not be doubted, he laid, but that they were overjoyed to fee him : (it feems he was the principal man among them, the captain of the veffel they had been fhipwrecked in having been dead fome time.) They were, been dead fome time.) he faid, the more furprized to fee him, becaufe they knew he was fallen into the hands of favages, who, they were fatisfied, would devour him, as they did all the reft of their prifoners; that when he told them the ftory of his deliverance, and in what manner he was furnifed for carrying them away, it furnifhed for carrying them away, it was like a dream to them; and their aftonifhment, they faid, was fomething like that of Jofeph's brethren, when he told them who he was, and told them the fory of his exaltation in Pharaoh's court. But when he fhewed them the arms, the powder, the ball brought and for brought them for their journey or voyage, they were rettored to themleves, took a juit frare of the joy of their deliverance, and immediately prepared to come away with him.

Their firt bufinefs was to get canoes; and in this they were obliged not to ftick fo much upon the honeft part of it, but to trefpafs upon their friendly favages, and to borrow two large canoes or periaguas, on pretence of going out a fifhing or for pleafure.
In thefe they came away the next morning, It feems they wanted no time to get themfelves ready, for they had no baggage, neither cloaths nor provifions, nor any thing in the world but what they had on them, and a few roots to eat, of which they ufed to make their bread.
They were in all three weeks ab-
rent, and in that time, unluckily for them, I had the occafion offered for bether part, and to get off from thy illand, leaving three of the moft in pucent, bardened, ungoverned, dif. agreeable villains behind me, that any man could defire to meet with, to the poor Spaniards great grief and difappointment you may be fure.
The only juft thing the rogues did was, that when the Spaniards came on thore, they gave my letter to them, and gave them provifions, and other relief, as I had ordered them to do; alfo they gave them the long paper of direetions, which I had left wath them, containing the particular methods which I took for managing every part of my life there; the way how I baked my bread, bred up my tame goats, and planted my corn; how I cated my grapes, made my pots, and, in a word, every thing I did; all this being wistten down, they gave to the Spaniards, two of whom undertood Englifh well enough; nor did they refure to accommodate the Spaniards with any thing elfe, for they agreed very well for fome time; they gave them an equal admiffion into the houfe or cave, and they began to live very lociably; and the head Spaniard, who had feen pretty much of my method, and Friday's father together, managed all their affairs; for, as for the Englimh men, they did nothing but ramble about the ifland, thoot parrots, and catch tortoiles, and when they came home at night the Spaniards provided their fuppers for them.
The Spaniards would have been fa. tisfied with this, would the others but have let them alone; which, however, they could not find in their hearts to co long; but, like the dog in the manger, they would not eat themrelves, and would not let others eat neither. The differences, neverthelefs, were at firf but trivial, and fuch as are not worth relating; but at latt it broke out into open war, and it began with all the rudenels and info. lence that can be imagined, wthout reafon, without proyocation, contrary to nature, and indeed to common fenfe; of it came from the the urif relation felves, whom I may call the accufersreves, whom I may call the accufers,
yet when I came to examipe the fel?
lows, they could not deny a word of 1t.
But before I come to the particulars of this part, I muft fupply a defect in my former relation; and this was, that I forgot to fet down among the reft, that, jult as we were weighing the anchor to fet fail, there happened a little quarrel on board our fhip, which I was afraid once would furn to a fecond matiny; nor was it appeafed, till the captain, rouzing up his courage, and taking us all to his affiftance, parted them by force, and making two of the moft refractory fellows prifoners, he laid them in irons; and as they lraz been active in the former diforders, and let fall fome ugly dangerous words the fecond time, he threatcned to carry them in irons to England, and have them, hanged there for mutiny and running away with the fhip.

This, it feems, though the captain did not intend to do it, frighted fome other men in the Ihip; and fome of them had put it into the heads of the ref, that the captain only gave them good words for thet prefent, till they fhould come to fome Englifh port, and that then they fhould be all put into gaol, and tried for their lives.
The mate got intelligence of this, and acquainted us with it; upon which it was defired that $I$, who ftill paffed for a great man among them, flould go, down with the mate, and fatisfy the men, and tell them, that they might be affured, if they behaved well the reft of the voyage, all they had done for the time paft fhould be pardoned. So I went; and after paffing my honour's word to them, they appeared eafy; and the more fo, when I cauled the two men, who had been laid in irons, to be releafed and forgiven. But this mutiny had brought us to an anchor for that night, the wind alfo falling caln. Next morning we found that our two men who had been laid in irons, had ftole each of them a mufquet, and fome other weapons; what powder or fhat they had, we knew not; and had taken the flip's pinnace, which was not yet hauled up, and rum away with her to their companions in roguery on fhore.
As ioon as we found this, I orderdhe long-boat on fhore, with twelve men and the mate, and away they went
to feek the ragues; but they could neither find them nor any of the reft, for they all fled into the woods wwen they faw the boat coming on thore. The mate was once refolved, on juitice to their roguery, to have deftroyed their plantations, burnt all their houf hold -ftuff and furniture, and left them to fhift without it; but having no order, he let all alone, left every thing as they found it, and bringing the pinnace away, came on board without them.
Thefe two men made their number five; but the other three villains were fo much wickeder than thefe, that afte they had been two or three days together, they turned their two new-comer out of doors to fhift for themfelves; and would have nothing to do with them nor could they, for a good while, be perfuaded to give them any food. As for the Spaniards, they were not yet come.

When the Spaniards came firft on fhore, the bufinefs began to go for ward; the Spaniards would have perfuaded the three Englifh brutes to have taken in their two cosintrymen again, that, as they faid, they might be all one family; but they would not hear of it. So the two poor fellows lived by themfelves, and finding nothing but induffry and application would make them live comfortable, they pitched their tents on the north thore of the ifland, but a liftle more to the weft, to be out of the danger of the favages, who always landed on the eaff parts of the ifland.
Here they built two huts, one to lodge in, and the other to lay up their magazines and ftores in; and the Spaniards having given them fome corn for feed, efpecially fome of the peas which I had left them, they dug and lanted, and inclofed, after the pattern I had fet for them all, and began to live pretty well. Their firft crop of corn was on the ground, and though it was but a little bit of land which they had dug up at firft, having had but a little time, yet it was enough to relieve them, and find them with bread and other eatables; and one of the fellows, being the cook's mate of the thip, was very ready at making foup, puddings, and fuch other preparations, as the rice, and the milk, and fach little flefh as they got, furnifhed him to do.
They were going on in a hitde thriving polture, when the three umnatneal
rogues, their own countrymen too, in mere humour, and to infult them, came and bullied them, and told them the ifland was theirs; that the governor, meaning me, had given them poffeffion of it, and nobody elfe had any right to it; and, damn them, they fhould build no houfes upon their ground, unlefs they would pay them rent for them.
The two men thought they had jefted at frift; and alked them to come and fit down, and fee what fine houfes they were that they had built, and tell them what rent they demanded And one of them merrily told them 2 if they were ground-landlords, he hoped, if they built tenements upon the land, and made improvements, they would, according to the cuftom of all landtords, grant them a long leafe and bid them go fetch a fcrivener to draw the writings. One of the three, damning and raging, told them, they fhould fee they were not in jeft; and going to a little place at a diftance, where the honeft men had made a fire to drefs their victuals, he takes a firebrand, and claps it to the outfide of their hut, and very fairly fet it on fire ; and it would have been all burnt down in a few minutes, if one of the two had not run to the fellow, thruft him away, and trod the fire out with his feet, and that not without fome difficulty too.
The fellow was in fuch a rage at the honeft man's thrufting him away, that he turned upon him with apole he had in his hand; and had not the man avoided the blow very nimbly, and run into the hut, he had ended his days ationce. His comrade, feeing the danger they were both in, ran in after him, and immediately they came both out with their mufquets; and the man that was firf ftruck at with the pole, knocked the fellow down who began the quarrel with the ftock of his mufquer, and that before the other two could come to help him; and then feeing the reft come at them, they ftood together, and prefenting the other ends of their pieces to them, bacte them ftand off.
The others had fire-arms with them too; but one of the two honeft men, bolder than his comrade, and made defperate by his danger, told them, if they offered to move hand or foot they: were all dead men, and boldly commanded them to lay down their amms.
man who had fired at him; when the yeft of the Spaniards, being in the cave, came out, and calling to him not to thoot, they ftepped in, fecured the other two, and took their arms from them.

When they were thus tifarmed, and found they had made all the Spaniards their enemies, as well as their own countrymen, they began to cool; and, giving the Spaniards better words, would have had their arms again; but the Spaniards, confidering the feud that was between them and the other two Englifhmen, and that it would be the beft method they could take to keep them from one another, told them they would do them no harm; and if they would live peaceably, they would be very willing to affit and afociate with them as they did before; but that they could not think of giving them their arms again, while they appeared fo refolved to do mifchief with them to their own countrymen, and had even threatened them ail to make them their fervants.

The rogues were now more capable to hear reafon than to act: reafon; but being refafed their arms; they went raving away, and raging like madment, threatening what they would do, though they had no fire-arms. But the Spaniards, defpifing their threatening, told them they fhould take care hows they offered any injury to their plantation or cattle; for, if they did, they would fhoot them, as they would do ravenous beafts, whereever they found them; and, if they fell into their hands alive, they would certainly be hanged. However, this was far from cooling them; but away they went, fwearing and raging like furies of hell. As foon as they were gone, came back the two men, in paffion and rage enough alfo, though of another kind; for, having been at their plantation, and finding it all demolifhed and deftroyed, as above, it will eafily be fuppofed they had provocation, enough; they could fcarce have room to tell their tale, the Spamiards were fo eager to tell them theirs; and it was frange enough fo find, that three men fhould thus bully mineteen, and receive no punifhment at all.

The Spaniards indeed defpifed them, and efpecially having thus difarmed them, made light of their threaten-
mgs; but the two Enghfimen refolv: ed to have their remedy againft them, what pains foever it coft to find them out.

But the Spaniards interpofed here too, and told them, that they were already difarmed; they could not confent that they (the two) fhould purfue them with fire-arms, and perhaps kill them: 'But,? faid the grave Spaniard, who was their governor, 'wwe 6 will endeavoun to make them do you 6 juftice, if you will leave it to us; 6 for, as there is no doubt but they 6 will come to us again when their 6 paffion is over, being not able to 6 fubfift without our affirtance, we pro6 mife you to make no peace with 6 them, without having a full fatis 6 faction for you; and, upon this con-- dition we hope you will promife tó - ufe no violence with them other - than in your defence.?

The two Englifhmen yielded to this very aukwardly, and with great reluctance; but the Spaniards protelted they did it only to keep them from bloodfhed, and to make all eafy at laft: 'for,' faid they, 'we are not fo 6 many of us; here istroom enough for ' us all, and it is great pity we fhould Enot be all good friends.' At length 1 hey did confent, and waited for the iffine of the thing, living for fome days with the Spaniards; for their own habitation was deftroyed.
In about five dayso time the three vagrants, tired with wandering, and almof ftarved with hunger, having chiefly lived on turtle's eggs all that while, came back to the grove; and finding my Spaniard, who, as I have faid, was the governor, and two more with him, walking by the fide of the creek, they came up in a very fubmiflive humble mamer, and begged to be received again into the family. The Spaniards ufed them civilly, but told them, they had acted fo umnaturally by their countrymen, and fo very grotsly by them, (the Spaniards) that they could not come to any conclafion without confolting the two Englifhmen, and the reft; but, however, they would go to them and difcourfe about it, and they fhould know in half an hour. It may be gueffed, that they were very hard put to it; for it feems; as they were to wait this half hour for an anfwer, they begged he would fend
then out fome bread in the mean time; which he did, and fent them at the fame time a large piece of goat's flefh, and a broiled parrot; which they eat very heartily, for they were hungry enough.
After half an hour's confultation they were called in, and a long debate had about them, their two countrymen charging them with the ruin of all their labour, and a defign to murder them; all which they owned before, and therefore could not deny now. Upon the whole, the Spaniards acted the moderators between them; and as they had obliged the two Englifhmen not to hurt the three, while they were naked and unarmed, fo they now obliged the three to go and rebuild their fellows two huts, one to be of the fame dimenfions, and the other larger than they were before; alfo to fence their ground again, where they had pulled up the fences, plant trees in the room of thofe pulled up, dig up the land again for planting corn, where they had fpoiled it; and, in a word, to reftore every thing in the fame flate as they found it, as near as they could; for entirely it could not be, the feafon for the corn and the growth of the trees and hedges not being poffible to be recovered.

Well, they all fubmitted to this; and as they had plenty of provitions given them all the while, they grew very orderly, and the whole fociety began to live pleafantly and agreeably together again; only that thefe three fellows could never be perfuaded to work; I mean, not for themfelves, except now and then a little, juft as they pleafed; however, the Spaniards told them plainly, that if they would but live fociably and friendly together, and fudy in the whole the good of the plantation, they would be content to work for them, and let them walk about and be as idle as they pleafed; and thus having lived pretty well together for a month or two, the Spaniards gave them their arms again, and gave them liberty to go abroad with them as before.

It was not above a week after they had thefe arms, and went abroad, but the ungrateful creatures began to be as infolent and troubleforne as before; but, however, an accident happened prefently upon this, which endangered
the fafety of them all; they were obliged to lay by all private refentments, and look to the prefervation of their lives.

It happened one night, that the Spaniard governor, as I call him, that is to fay, the Spaniard whofe life I had faved, who was now the captain, or leader, or governor of the reft, found himfelf very uneafy in the night, and could by no means get any fleep: he was perfectly well in body, as he told me the ftory, only found bis thoughts tumultuous; his mind ran upon men fighting, and killing one another, but was broad awake, and could not by any means get any fleep; in fhort, he lay a great while; but, growing more and more unealy, he refolved to rife. As they lay, being fo many of them, upon goat-1kins, laid thick upon fuch couches and pads as they made for themfelves, and not in hammocks and hip-beds, as I did, who was but one; fo they had little to do, when they were willing to rife, but to get up upon their feet, and perhaps put on a coat, fuch as it was, and their pumps, and they were ready for going any way that their thoughts guided them.
Being thus gotten up, he looked out; but, being dark, he could fee little or nothing; and befides, the trees which I had planted, as in my former account is deferibed, and which were now grown tall, intercepted his fight, fo that he could only look up, and fee that it was a clear ftar-light night; and hearing no noife, he returned and laid him down again; but it was all one, he could not fleep, nor could he compofe himfelf to any thing like reft, but his thoughts were to the laft degree uneafy, and yet he knew not for what.

Having made fome noife with rifing and walking about, going out and coming in, another of them waked, and calling, afked who it was that was up. The governor told him how it had been with him. "Say you fo :? fays the other Spaniard; 'fuch things 6 are not to be ilighted, I affure you ; 6 there is certainly fome mifchief work - ing,' fays he, 'near us.' And prefently he anked him, 'Where are the Englifh" men?'- They are all in their huts, fays he, 'fafe enough.' It feems, the spaniards had kept poffeffion of the main apartment, and had made a place where
the three Englifhmen, fince their laft mutiny, always quartered by themfelves, and could not come at the reft. 6 Well,' fays the Spaniard, ' there is - fomething in it, $I$ am perfuaded from - my own experience; I am fatisfied - our fpirits embodied have converfe 6 with, and receive intelligence from, - the fpirits unembodied, and inhabit-- ing the invifible world; and this! 6. friendly notice is given for our ad-- vantage, if we know how to make 6 ufe of it. Come,' fays he, 'let us go - out and look abroad; and if we find - nothing at all in it to jultify our trou-- ble, I'll tell you a ftory to the pur-- pofe, that fhall convince you of the - juftice of my propofing it.?

In a word, they went out to go to the top of the hill, where I ufed to gor; but they, being ftrong, and in good company, nor alone, as I was, ufed none of my cautions to go up by the ladder, and then pulling it up atter them, to go up a fecond fage to the top, but were going round through the grove unconcerned and unway, when they were furprized with feeing a light, as of fire, a very little way of from them, and hearing the voices of mien, not of one or two, but of a great number.
In all the difcoveries I had made of the favages landing on the ifland, it was lmy conftant care to prevent them making the leaft difcovery of there being any inhabitant upon the place; and when by any neceffity they? came to know it, they felt it fo effecthally, that they that got away, were fcarce able to give any account of it, for we difappeared as foon as poffible; nor did ever any that had feen me, efcape to tell any one elfe, except it were the three favages in our iaft encounter, who jumped into the boat, of whom I mentioned, that I/ was afraid they fhould go home and biing more help.

- Whether it was the confequence of the efcape of thofe men, that fo great a number came now together; or whether they came ignorantly and by accident, on their ufual bloody errand, the Spaniards could not it feems un:derftand: but whatever it was, it had been their bufinefs, either to have concealed themfelves, and not have feen them at all; much lefs to have let the favages have feen that there were any
inhabitants in the place; but to frave fallen upon them fo effectually, as that not a man of them fhould have efcapt ed, which could only have been by getting in between them and their boats; but this prefence of mind was wanting to them, which was the ruin of their tranquillity for a great while.

We need not doubt, but that the governor, and the man with him, furprized with this fight, ran back immediately and raifed their fellows? giving them an account of the imminent danger they were all in ; and they again as readily took the alarm, but it was imponible to perfuade them to ftay clofe within where they were, but that they muft all run out to fee how things food.
While it was dark, indeed, they were well-enough, and they had opportunity enough for fome hours, to view them by the light of three fires they had made at fome diftance from one another. What they were doing they knew not, and what to do themfelves they knew not; for, firft, the enemy were too many; and, fecondly, they did not keep together, but were divided into feveral parties, and were on flore in feveral places.

The Spaniards were in no fmall confternation at this fight; and as they found tliat the fellows ran ftraggling all over the fhore, they made no dotibt but firft or laft fome of them wbuld cliop in upon their habitation, or upory fome other place, where they would fee the tokens of intabitants; and they wefe ifi great perplexity alfo for fear of their flock of goats, which would have been little lefs than fary ${ }^{3}$ ing them, if they fhould have been defroyed; fo the firlt thing they refolved upon was, to difpatch three mien away before it was light, viz. two Spaniards and one Englifhman, to drive all the goats away to the great valley where the cave was, and, if need were, to drive them into the very cave itfelf.

- Could they have feen the favages all together in one body, and at a diftance from their canoes, they tefolved, if there had been an hundred of them, to have attacked them; but that could not be obtained, for they were fome of them two miles off from the other, and, as it appeared afterwards, were of two different nations.
After having mufed a great while
on the courfe they fould take, and beating their brains in confidering their prefent circumfances, they refolved at laft, while it was dark, to fend the old faxage (Friday's father) out as a fpy, to learn, if poffible, fomething concerning them, as what they came for, and what they intended to do, and the like. The old man readily undertook it, and ftripping himfelf quite naked, as molt of the favages were, away he went: ffter he had gone an hour or two, he brings word, that he had been among them undifcovered; that he found they were two parties, and of two feveral nations, who had war with one, another, and had had a great battle in their own country, and that both fides having had feveral prifoners taken in the fight, they were by mere chance landed in the fame ifland, for the devouring their prifoners, and making merry; but their coming fo by chance to the fame place, had fooiled all their mirth; that they were in a great rage at one another, and were fo near, that he believed they would fight again as foon as day-light began to appear; but he did not perceive that they had any notion of any body's being on the sliand but themfelves. He had hardly made an end of telling the ftory, when they could perceive, by the unufual noif they made, that the two little armies swere engaged in a bloody fight.
Friday's father ufed all the arguments he could to perfuade our people to lie clofe, and not be feen; he fold them, their fafety confifted in it, and that they had nothing to do but to lie fill, and the favages would kill one another to their hands, and the reft would go away; and it was fo to a tittle. But it was impoffible to prevail, efpecially upon the Englifhmen; their curiofity was fo importunate up on their prudentials, that they muft run out and fee the battle. However, they ufed fome caution, viz. they did not go openly, juft by their own dwelling, but went farther into the woods, and placed themfelves to advantage, where they might fecurely fee them manage the fight, and, as they thought, not to be feen by them; but, it feems, the fevares did fee them, as we thall find hereafter.
The battle was very fierce; and if

I might believe the Englifhmen, one of them faid, he could perceive that fome of them were men of great bravery, of invincible fpirits, and of great policy in guiding the fight. The batthe, they faid, held two hours, before they could guefs which party would be beaten; but then that party which was neareft our people's habitation, began to appear weakeft, and aftar fome time more, fome of them began to fly; and this put our men again into a great confternation, left any of thofe that fled flould run into the grove before their dwelling for fhelter, and thereby involuntarily difcover the place; and that by confequence the purfuers fhould do the like in fearch for them. Upon this they refolved, that they would ftand armed within the wall, and whoever came into the grove, they fhould fally out over the wall and kill them; fo that, if poffible, not one fhould return to give an account of it. They ordered alfo, that it fhould be done with their fwords, or by knocking them down with the flock of the mufquet, not by flooting them, for fear of raifing an alarm by the noife.

As they expected, it fell out; three of the routed army fled for life, and croffing the creek, ran directly into the place, not in the leaft knowing whither they went, but ruming as into a thick wood for fhelter : the fcout they kept to look abroad gave notice of this within, with this addition, to our men's great fatisfaction, viz. that the conquerors had not purfued them, or feen which way they were gone. Upon this the Spaniard governor, a man of humanity, would not fuffer them to kill the three fugitives; but, fending three men out by the top of the hill, ordered them to go round, and coming in behind them, furprize and take them prifoners, which was done; the refidue of the conquered people fled to their canoes, and got off to fea; the victors retired, and made no purfuit, or very little ; but drawing themfelves into a body together, gave two great fcreaming fhouts, which they fuppofed were by way of triumph, and to the fight ended: and the fame day, about three o'clock in the afternoon, they alfo marched to their canoes. And thus the Spaniards had their ifland
again free to themfelves, their fright was over, and they faw no favages in feveral years after.

After they were all gone, the Spaniards came out of their den; and viewing the field of battle, they found about two and thirty dead men upon the fpot; fome were killed with great long arrows, feveral of which were found fticking in their bodies; but moft of them were killed with their great wooden fwords, fixteen or feventeen of which they found in the field of battle, and as many bows, with a great many arrows. Thefe fwords were great unwieldly things, and they muit be very ftrong men that ufed them. be very frong men that ufed them.
Moft of thofe men that were killed Moft of thole men that were killed
with them, had their heads mafhed to pieces, as we may fay, or, as we call it in Englifh, their brains knocked out, and feveral of their arms and legs broken; fo that it is evident they fight with inexpreffible rage and fury. They found not one wounded man that was not fone dead ; for either they flay by their enemy till they have quite killed him, or they carry all the wounded men, that are not quite dead, away with them.

This deliverance tamed our Englifhmen for a great while : the fight had filled them with horror, and the confequence appeared terrible to the laft degree, efpecially upon fuppofing that fome time or other they fhould fall into the hands of thofe creatures ; who would not only kill them as enemies, but kill them for food, as we kill our caftle. And they profeffed to me, that the thoughts of being eaten up like beef or mutton, though it was fuppofed it was not to be till they were dead, had fomething in it fo horxible, that it naufeated their very fomachs, made them fick when they shought of it, and filled their minds with unufual ferror, that they were not themfelves for fome weeks after.
This, as I faid, tamed even the three Englifh brutes I have been fpeaking of; and for a great while after they were very tractable, and went about the common bufinefs of the whole fociety well enough; planted, fowed, reaped, and began to be all naturalized to the country; but fome time after this, they fell all into fuch fimple meafures again as brought them into a great deal of trouble,

They had taken three prifoners, as I had obferved; and thefe three being lufty ftout young fellows, they made them fervants, and taught them to work for them; and, as flaves, they did well enough ; but they did not take their meafures with them as I did by my man Friday; viz. to begin with them upon the principle of having faved their lives, and then inftructed them in the rational principles of life, much lefs of religion, civilizing and reducing them by kind ufage, and affectionate arguings; but, as they gave them their food every day, fo they gave them their work too, and kept them fully employed in drudgery, enough; but they failed in this by it, that they never had them to affift them and fight for them, as I had my man Friday, who was as true to me as the very flefh upon my bones.

But to come to the family part. Being all now good friends, (for common danger, as I faid above, had effectually reconciled them) they began to confider their general circumfances; and the firft thing that came under their confideration was, whether, feeing the favages particularly haunted that fide of the inland, and that there were more remote and retired parts of it equally adapted to their way of living, and manifeftly to their advantage, they mould not rather remove their habitation, and plant in fome more proper place for their fafety, and efpecially for the fecurity of their cattle and corn.
Upon this, after long debate, it was conceived, that they flould not remove their habitation; becaufe that fome time or other they thought they might hear from their governor again, meaning me; and if I fhould fend any one to feek them, I would be fure to direct them on that fide, where, if they fould find the place demolifhed, they would conclude the favages had killed us all, and we were gone, and fo our fupply would go away too.
But as to their corn and cattle, they agreed to remove them into the valley where my cave was, where the land was as proper to both, and where indeed there was land enough. However, upon fecond thoughts, they altered one part of that refolution too, and refolved only to remove part of their cattle thither, and plant part of their
com there; and fo, if one part was to the top of the hill; leaving no way, deltroyed, the other might be faved. not fo much as for themfelves to come And one piece of prudence they ufed, And one piece of prudence they ured,
which it was very well they did; viz. that they had never trufted thefe three favages, which they had taken prifoners, with knowing any thing of the plantation they had made in that valley, or of any cattle they had there; much lefs of the cave there, which they kept in cafe of neceffity, as a fafe retreat: and thither they carried alfo the two barrels of powder, which I had fent them at my coming away.

But, however, they refolved not to change their habitation; yet they agreed, that as I had carefully covered it firft with a wall of fortification, and then with a grove of trees; fo, feeing their fafety confifted entirely in their being concealed, of which they were now fully convinced, they fet to work to cover and conceal the place yet more effectually than before. To this purpofe, as I had planted trees (or rather thruit in ftakes, which in time all to be frees) for fome good difance before the entrance into my apartment,
they went on in the fame manner, and filled up the reft of that whole fpace of ground, from the trees I had fet, quite down to the fide of the creek, where, as I faid, I landed my floats, and even into the very ouze where the tide flowed, not fo much as leaving any place
to land, or any fign that there had been any landing thereabout. Thefe ftakes allo, being of a wood very forward to grow, as I have noted formerly, they took care to have generally very much larger and taller than thofe which I had planted, and placed them fo very thick and clofe, that when they had-been three or four years grown, there was no piercing with the eye any confiderable way into the plantation. As for that part which I had planted, the trees were grown as thick as a man's thigh; and among them they placed fo many other fort ones, and fo thick, that, in a word, it food like a pallifado a quarter of a mile thick, and it was next to impoffible to penetrate it, but with a little army, to cut it all down; for a little dog could hardly get between the trees, they thood fo clofe.
But this was not all; for they did the fame by all the ground to the righthand, and to the left, and round even
out, but by the ladder placed up to the fide of the hill, and then lifted up, and placed again from the firtt ftage up to the top; which ladder, when it was taken down, nothing but what had wings or witchcraft to affift it, could come at them.

This was excellently well contrived: nor was it lefs than what they afterwards found occafion for; which ferved to convince me, that as human prudence has authority of Providence to juftify it, fo it has, doubilefs, the direction of Providence to fet it to work; and, would we liften carefully to the voice of it, I am fully perfuaded we might prevent many of the dilafters which our lives are now by our own negligence fubjected to. But this by the way.

I return to the fory. They lived two years after this in perfeef retirement, and had no more vifits from the favages; they had, indeed, an alarm given them one morning, which put them in a great confternation; for, fome of the Spaniards being out early one morning on the weft fide, or rather end of the illand, which, by the way, was that end where I never went, for fear of being difcovered, they were furprized with feeing above twenty canoes of Indians juft coming on flore.
They made the beft of their way home, in hurry enough; and giving the alarm to their comrades, they kept clofe all that day and the next, going out only at night, to make oblervation. But they had the good luck to be miftaken; for wherever the favages went, they did not land at that time on the ifland, but purfued fome other defign.
And now they had another broil with the three Englifhmen; one of which, a moft turbulent fellow, being in a rage at one of the three flaves, which I mentioned they had taken, becaufe the fellow had not done fomething right which he bid him do, and feemed a little untractable in his flewing him, drew a hatchet out of a frogbelt, in which he wore it by his fide, and fell upon the poor favage, not to correct him, but to kill him. One of the Spaniards, who was by, fecing him give the fellow a barbarous cut with the hatchet, which he aimed at
his head, but ftruck into, his n moulder, fo that he thought he had cut the poor creature's arm off, ran to him, and, intreating him not to murder the poor man, clapt in between him and the fan Wage, to prevent the milchiet.

The fellow, being enraged the more tt this, fruck at the Spamiard with his hatchet, and fwore he would ferve him as be intended to ferve the favage; which the Spaniard perceiving, avoided the blow, and with a fhovel, which he had in his hand (for they were working in. the field about their corn-land) knocked the brute down: another of the Englifmen, rumning at the fame time to help his comiade, knocked the Spa, niard down; and then two Spanards more came to help their man, and a third Englifiman fell upon them. They had none of them any fire-arms, or any other weapons but hatchers and other tools, except the third Englifhman; he had one of my old rulty cutlaffes, with which he made at the laft Spaniards, and wounded them both. This fray fet the whole family in an uproar, and more help coming in, they took the three Englifimen prit doners. The next queftion was, What fhould be done with them? They had been fo often mutinous, and were fo furious, fo defperate, and fo idle witha1, that they knew not what courfe to take with them, for they were mifchievous to the higheft degree, and valued not what hurt they did any man; fo that, in Chort, it was not fafe to live with them.
The Spaniard who was governor, fold them in fo many words, that if they had been his own countrymen, be would have hanged them all; for all laws, and all governors, were to preferve lociety; and thole who were dangerous to the fociety, ought to be expelled out of it: but, as they were Englifhmen, and that it was to the generous kindness of an Englithman that they all owed their prefervation and deliverance, he would ufe them with all poffible lenity, and would leave them to the judgment of the other two Englifhmen, who were their countrymen.
One of the two honeft Engliffimen food up, and faid, they defired it might not be left to them: ' For,' fays he, 'I am fure we ought to fentence 'them to the gallows.' And with that
gives, an account, how Will Atkins, one of the three, had propofed to have all the five Englifhmen join' together, and murder all the Spaniards when they were in their flep. When the Spanifh governor heard
this, he calls to Will Atkins. "How, ( Seignior Atkins, fays the, s will - you murder us all! What have you \& to fay to that? That hardened villain was fo far from denying it, that he faid it was true; and, G-d damn him, they would do it fill before they had done with them. Well, 6 but Seignior Atkins, faid the Spaniard, swhat have we done to you, f that you will kill us? And what would you get by killing us? And what 6 muilt we do to prevent your killing 6 us? Mult we kill you, or will you 6 kill us? Why will you put us to the 6neceffity of this, Seignior Atkins? fays the Spaniard very calmly, and fmiling.

Seignior Atkins was in fuch a rage at the Spaniard's making a jeft of it, that, had he not been held by three men, and withal had no weapons with him , it was thought he would have attempted to have killed the Spaniard in the middle of all the company.

This hair-brained carriage obliged them to confider ferioufly what was to be done. The two Englifhmen, and the Spaniard who faved the poor fayage, were of the opinion, that they fhould hang one of the three for an example to the reft; and that particularly it flould be he that had twice attempted to commit murder with his hatchet; and indeed there was fome reafon to believe he had done it, for the poor favage was in fuch a miferable condition with the wound he had received, that it was thought he could not live.
But the governor Spaniard fill faid, no, it was an Englifhman that had faved all their lives, and he would never confent to put an Englifiman to death, though he had murdered half of them; nay, he faid, if he had been killed himfelf by an Englifhman, and had time left to fpeak, it fhould be, that they Thould pardon him.

This was fo pofitively infifed on by the governor Spaniard, that there was no gainfaying it; and, as merciful councils are moft apt to preyall, where they are fo earneitly preffed, fo they all came into it; but then it was to

Eonlidered, what thould be done to Keep them from the mifchief they defighed ; for all-agreed, govertior and ath, that means were to be ffed for preferving the fociety from danger. A fter a lon ${ }^{2}$ debrite it was agreed, Fift, qufat they fifould 'be difarmed, and not pertritted to have eitfier gan, or powder, or ffot, or fword, of any weapon, and fliould be turned 'out of the fociety, and left to live where they would ard how they conid, by themfelves; but that none of the reft, Ceither Spaniards or Engliff, fhould converfe, with them, fpeak with them, or have any thiff to do with them; that they Thould be forbid to come within a certain diftance of the place where the reft diwelt; and that if they offered to commit any diforder, fo as to foil, burn, kill, or deftroy any of the corm, plantings, buildings, fences, or cattle belonging to the fociety, that they fhoutd die without melcy, and they fhould floot them wherever they could find them.

The governor, a man of great fumanity, mufing upon the fentence, confidered a little upon it; and, turning to the two honett Englifhmen, faid, 'Hold! you muft reflect, that 6 it will be long ere they can raife - corn and cattle of their own, and ${ }^{6}$ they muft not ftarve; we milit there-- fore allow them proxifions. So be caufed to be added, That they hould have a proportion of corn given them to laft them eight months, and for feed to fow, by which time they might be fuppofed to raife fome of their own; that they flould have fix milch goats, four be-goats, and fix kids given them, as well for prefent fubfiftence, as for a ftore; and that they fhould have tools given them for their work in the field; Juch as, fix hatchets, an ax, a faw, and the fike: but they fhould have none of there tools or provifions, untels they would foear folemnly, that they would not hurt or injure any of the Spaniards with them, of of their fellow Englifhmen.
Thus they difmifed them the fociety, and turned them out to fhift for themfelves. They weent away fullen and refractory, as neither contented to go away, or to ftay ; but, as there was noremedy, they went, pretending
to go and chufe a place where they fhould fettle themfelves, to plant, and live by themfelves; and fome provifions were given them, but no weapons.
About four or five days after, they came again for fome victuals, and gave the governor an account where they had pitched their tents, and marked themfelves out a habitation or plantation. It was' a very convenient place indeed, on the remoteft part of the ifland, N.E. much about the place where I providentially landed in my firf voyage, when $F$ was diven out to fea, the Lord alone knows whither, in my foolifh attempt to farround the ifland.
Here they butit themfelves two hand fome huts, and contrived them in a manner like my firft habitation, being clofe under the fide of a hill, having fome trees growing already to the three fides of it ; fo that by planting others; it would be very eafily covered froni the fight, unle's narrowly fearched for. They defired fome dry goat-fkins for beds and covering; which were given them; and, upon their giving theie words, that they would not difturb the reft, or injure any of their plantations, they gave them hatchets, and what other tools they could fpares fome peas, barley, and rice for fowome peas, barley, and rice, for fowing; and, in a word, any thing they wanted, but arms and ammunition.
They lived in this feparate condition about fix months, and had gotten in their firft harvelt, though the quanfity was bur finall, the parcel of land they had planted being but little; form indeed, having all their plantation to form, they fiad a great deal of wofk upon their hands; and when they came to make boards, and pots, and fuch things, they were quite out of their element, and could make nothing of it; and when the rainy feafon came on, for want of a cave in the earths they could not keep their grain dry, and it was in great danger of fooiling: and this humbled them much; fo they came and begged the Spaniards to help them, which they very readily did; and in four days worked a great hole in the fide of the hill for them, big enougl' to fecure their corn and other things from the rain; but it was but a poor place at bef, compared to mine
and efpecially as mine was then; for the Spaniards had greatly enlarged it, and made feveral new apartinents in it.

About three quarters of a year after this feparation, a new frolick took thefe rogues, which, togethef with the former villainy they had committed, brought mifchief enough upon them, and had very near been the ruin of the whole colony. The three new affociates began, it feems, to be weary of the laborious life they led, and that without hope of bettering their circumftances; and a whim took them, that they would make a voyage to the continent, from whence the favages came, and would try if they could not feize upon fome prifoners among the natives there, and bring them home, fo as to make them do the laborious part of the work for them.
The project was not fo prepofterous, if they had gone no farther; but they did nothing, and propofed nothing, but had either minchief in the defign, or mifchief in the event: and, if I may give my opinion, they feemed to be under a blaft from Heaven; for if we will not allow a vifible curfe to purfue vifible crimes, how fhall we reconcile the events of things with Divine Juftice ? It was certainly an apparent vengeance on their crime of mutiny and piracy, that brought them to the itate they were in ; and, as they fhewed not the leaft remorfe for the crime, but added new villainies to it, fuch as, particularly, that piece of monftrous cruelty of wounding a poor flave, becaufe he did not, or perhaps could not underftand to do what he was directed; and to wound him in fuch a manner, as, no queftion, made him a cripple all his life; and in a place where no furgeon or medicine could be had for his cure; and, what was ftill worfe, the murderous intent; or, to do juftice to the crime, the intentional murder, for fuch to be fure it was, as was afterwards the formed defign they all laid, to murder the Spaniards in cold blood, and in their fleep.
But I leave obferving, and return to the fory. The three fellows came down to the Spaniards one morning, and in very humble terms defired to be admitted to fpeak with them. The Spaniards very readily heard what they had to fay, which was this: that they were tired of living in the man-
ner they did; that they were not handy enough to make the neceffaries tley wanted; and that, having no help, they found they fhould be itarved; but if the Spaniards would give them leave to take one of the canoes which they came over in, and give them arms and ammunition, proportioned for their defence, they would go over to the main, and feek their fortune, and fo deliver them from the trouble of fupplying them with any other provifions.
The Spaniards were glad enough to be rid of them, but yet very honeftly reprefented to them the certain defruction they were running into; told them, they had fuffered fuch hardflips upon that very fpot, that they could, without any fpirit of prophecy, tell them, that they would be flarved or murdered; and bade them confider of it.
The men replied audacioufly, they hould be ftarved if they ftayed here, for they could not work, and would not work; and they could but be ffarved abroad; and if they were murdered, there was an end of them, they had no wives or children to cry after them : and, in fhort, infifted importunately upon their demand, declaring that they would go, whether they would give them any arms or no.
The Spaniards told them, with great kindnefs, that if they were refolved to go, they flould not go like naked men, and be in no condition to defend themfelves; and that though they could ill fpare their fire-arms, having not enough for themfelves, yet they would let them have two murquets, a piftol, and a cutlafs, and each man a hatchet, which they thought was fufficient for them.

In a word, they accepted the offer, and having baked them bread enough to ferve them a month, and given them as much goats flefh as they could eat while it was fweet, and a great baiket full of dried grapes, a pot full of frefh water, and a young kid alive to kill, they boldly fet out in a canoe for a voyage over the fea, where it was at leaft forty miles broad.
The boat was indeed a large one, and would have very well carried fifteen or twenty men ; and therefore was rather too big for them to manage = but as they had a fair breeze, and the
flood.
flood-tide with them, they did well enough. They had made a matt of a long pole, and a fail of four large goat-fkins dried, which they had fewed or laced together; and away they went merrily enough, The Spaniards called after them, 'Bon veajo;' and no man ever thought of feeing them any more.

The Spaniards would often fay to one another, and the two honeft Englifhmen who remained behind, how quiet and comfortably they lived now thofe three turbulent fellows weregone. As for their ever coming again, that was the remoteft thing from their thoughts that could be imagined ; when Behold! after twenty-two days abfence, one of the Englifhmen being abroad upon his planting-work, fees three frange men coming towards him tit a diftance, two of them with guns apon their fhoulders.
Away runs the Englifhman, as if he was bewitched, and came frighted and amazed to the governor Spaniard, and tells them they were all undone, for there were ftrangers landed upon che ifland, he could not tell who. The Spaniard, paufing a while, fays to him, How do you mean, you cannot tell 6 who ? They are favages to be fure. 6No, no,' fays the Englifhman, 'they 6 are men in cloaths, with arms. 'Nay then,' fays the Spaniard, 'why are you concerned? If they are not 6 favages, they mult be friends; for there is no Chriftian nation upon 6 earth but will do us good rather 6 than harm.
While they were debating thus, ame the three Englinimen, and fanding without the wood, which was newplanted, hallooed to them. They preently knew their voices; and fo all the wonder of that kind ceafed. But now the admiration was turned upon another queftion; viz. What could be che matter, and what made them come back again?

It was not long before they brought the men in; and enquiring where they had been, and what they had been doing? they gave them a full account of their voyage, in a few words, viz. That they reached the land in two days, or fomething lefs; but, finding the people alarmed at their coming, and preparing with bows and arrows to fight them, they durf not go ors
fhore, but failed on to the northware fix or feven hours, till they came to $\mathbf{i}$ great opening, by which they perceived that the land they faw from our ifland was not the main, but an ifland that entering that opening of the fea; they faw another ifland on the righthand north, and feveral more weft; and, being refolved to land fomewhere, they put over to one of the iflands which lay weff, and went boldly on fhore; that they found the people were courteous and friendly to them, and they gave them feveral roots, and fome dried fifh, and appeared very fociable; and the women, as well as the men; were very forward to fupply them with any thing they could get for them to eat, and brought it to them a great way upon their heads.
They continued here four days, and enquired, as well as they could of them by figns, what nations were this way, and that way; and were told of feveral fierce and terrible people, that lived almoft every way; who, as they made known by figns to them, ufed to eat men ; but as for themfelves, they faid that they never eat men or women, except only fuch as they took in the wars ; and then they owned, that they made a great feaft, and eat their prifoners.
The Englifhmen enquired, whent they had a feaft of that kind; and they told them, two moons ago, pointing to the moon, and then to two fingers; and that their great king had two hundred prifoners now, which he had taken in his war, and they were feeding them to make them fat for the next feaft. The Engliftmen feemed mighty defirous to fee thofe prifoners; but the others, miftaking them, thought they were defirous to have fome of them, to carry away for their own eatingo So they beckoned to them, pointing to the fetting of the fun, and then to the rifing ; which was to fignify, that the next morning, at fun-rifing, they would bring ome for them : and, ac cordingly, the next morning, they brought down five women and eleven men, and gave them to the Englifimen, to carry with them on their yoy age, juft as we would bring fo many cows and oxen down toa lea-port town to vi\&tual a fhip.

As brutifh and barbarous as thefe fellows were at home, their fomachs A $a \quad$ turned
turned at this fight, and they did not know what to do : to refufe the prifoners, would have been the highef affront to the favage gentry that offered them; and what to do with them they knew not; however, upon fome debate, they refolved to accept of them and, in return, they gave the favages that brought them one of their hatchets, an old key, a knife, and fix or feven of their bullets; which, though they did not underftand, they feemed extremely pleafed with; and then tying the poor creatures hands behind them, they (the people) dragged the prifoners into the boat for ourmen.
The Englifhmen were obliged to come away as foon as they had them, or elfe they that gave them this noble prefent would certainly have expected that they fhould have gone to work with them, have killed two or three o them the next morning, and perhaps have invited the donors to dinner,

But, having taken their leave, with all the refpects and thanks that could well pafs between people, where, on either fide, they underftood not one word they could fay, they put off with their boat, and came back towards the firft illand ; where, when they arrived, they fet eight of their prifoners at liberty, there being too many of them for their occafion.

In their voyage, they endeavoured to have fome communication with their prifoners; but it was impoffible to make them underftand any thing; nothing they could fay to them, or give them, or do for them, but was locked upon as going about to murder them. They firft of all unbound them but the poor creatures fcreamed at that, efpecially the women, as if they had juft felt the knife at their throats ; for they immediately concluded they were unbound on purpofe to be killed.
If they gave them any thing to eat, it was the fame thing; then they concluded, it was for fear they Thould fink in flefh, and fonot be fat enough to kill; if they looked at one of them more particularly, the party prefently concluded, it was to fee whether he or fhe was fatteft and fitteft to kill firft; nay, after they had brought them quite over, and began to ufe them kindly, and treat them well, ftill they expected every day to make a dinner or fupper for their new mafters.

When the three wanderers had given this unaccountable hiftory or journa of their voyage, the Spaniard afked them, where their new family was. And being told that they had brought them on fhore, and put them into one of their huts, and were come to beg fome victuals for them; they (the Spaniards) and the other two Englifhmen, that is to fay, the whole colony, refolved to go all down to the place, and fee them; and did fo, and Friday's father with them.
When they came into the hut, there they fat all bound; for when they had brought them on fhore, they bound their hands, that they might not take the boat and make their elcape; there, I fay, they fat, all of them ftark naked. Firft, there were three men, lufty comely fellows, well fhaped, ftraight and fair limbs, about thirty to thirty-five years of age ; and five women, whereof two might be from thirty to forty; two more not above twenty-four or twen-ty-five; and the fifth, a tall comely maiden, about fixteen or feventeen. The women were well-favoured agreeable perfons, both in fhape and features, only tawny; and two of them, had they been perfect white, would have pafted for handfome women, even in London itfelf, having very pleafant agreeable countenances, and of a very modeft behaviour, efpecially when they came afterwards to be cloathed, and dreffed as they called it, though that drefs was very indifferent it muft be confeffed; of which hereafter.

The fight, you may be fure, was fomething uncouth to our Spaniards, who were (to give them a juft character) men of the beft behaviour, of the moft calm, fedate tempers, and perfect good-humour that ever 1 met with; and, in particular, of the moft modefty, as will prefently appear : I fay, the fight was very uncouth, to fee two naked men and five naked women, all together bound, and in the moft miferable circumiltances that human nature could be fuppofed to be; viz. to be expecting every moment to be dragged out, and have their brains knocked out, and then to be eaten up like a calf that is killed for a dainty.
The firft thing they did was to caufe the old Indian, Friday's father, to go in and fee firft if he knew any of them, and then if he underfood any
of their fpeech. As foon as the old man came in, he looked ferioufly at them, but knew none of them; neither could any of them underftand a word he faid, or a fign he could make, exceptone of the women.
However, this was enough to anfwer the end, which was to fatisfy them, that the men into whofe hands they were fallen were Chriftians; that they abhorred eating of men or women and that they might be fure they would not be killed. As foon as they were affured of this, they difcovered fuch a joy, and by fuch aukward and feveral ways, as is hard to defcribe; for it feems they were of feveral nations.

The woman, who was their interpreter, was bid, in the next place, to afk them if they were willing to be fervants, and to work for the men who had brought them away to fave their lives? At which they all fell a dancing; and prefently one fell to taking up this, and another that, any thing that lay next, to carry on their floulders; to intimate that they were willing to work.

The governor, who found that the having women among them would prefently be attended with fome inconveniency, and might occafion fome frife, and perhaps blood, afked the three men what they intended to do with thefe women, and how they intended to ufe them, whether as fervants, or as women. One of the Englifhmen anfwered very boldly and readily, that they would ufe them as both. To which the governor faid, © I am not going to reftrain you from 6 it; you are your own matters as to - that: but this I think is but juf, - for avoiding diforders and quarrels s among you, and I defire it of you for that reafon only; viz. that you 3. will all engage, that if any of you - take any of thefe women, as a wo-- man or wife, he fhall take but one; * and that, having taken one, none 6 elfe fhall touch her; for though we 6 cannot marry any of you, yet it is s but reafonable, that while you ftay

- here, the woman any of you takes
- fhould be maintained by the man that
s takes her, and fhould be his wife; I
6 mean,' fays he, 'while he continues
5 herel, and that none elfe fhould have
s any thing to do with her.' All this
appeared fo juft, that every one agreed to it without any difficulty.
Then the Englifimen afked the Spaniards if they defigned to take any of them. But every one anfwered, 'No. Some of them faid they had wives in Spain, and others did not like women that were not Chriftians; and all together declared that they would not touch one of them ; which was an inflance of fuch virtue, as I have not met with in all my travels. On the other hand, to be fhort, the five Englifhmen took them every one a wife; that is to fay, a temporary wife; and fo they fet up a new form of living; for the Spaniards and Friday's father lived in my old habitation, which they had enlarged exceedingly within; the three fervants, which they had taken in the late battle of the favages, lived with them; and thefe carried on the main part of the colony, fupplying all the reft with food, and affifting them in any thing as they could, or as they found neceffity required.
But the wonder of this ftory was, how five fuch refractory ill-matched fellows fhould agree about thefe women, and that two of them fhould not pitch upon the fame woman, efpecially feeing two or three of them were, without comparifon, more agreeable than the others: but they took a good way nough to prevent quarrelling among themfelves; for they fet the five women by themfelves in one of their huts, and they went all into the other hut, and drew lots among them who fhould chufe firft.
He that drew to chufe firf, went away by himfelf to the hut where the poor naked creatures were, and fetched out her he chofe; and it was worth obferving, that he that chofe firft took her that was reckoned the homelieft and the oldeft of the five, which made mirth enough among the reft; and even the Spaniards laughed at it: but the fellow confidered better than any of them, that it was application and bufinefs that they were to expect affift ance in, as much as any thing elfe; and fhe proved the belt wife in the parcel.

When the poor women faw themfelves fet in a row thus, and fetched out one by one, the terrors of their condition returned upon them again,
and they firmly believed that they were now going to be devoured. Accord. ingly, when the Englifh failor came in and fetched out one of them, the reft fet up a mof lamentable cry, and relt let up a moit lamentable cry, and
hung abous her, and took their leave hung abous her, and took their leave
of her with fuch agonies, and fuch affection, as would have grieved the hardeft heart in the world; nor was is poffible for the Englinmen to fatisfy them that they were not to be immer diately murdered, till they fetched the diately murdered, till they fetched the
sld man, Friday's father, who infant-iy let them know, that the five men, who had fetehed them out one by one, had chofen them for their wives.
When they had done this, and the fright the women were in was a little over, the men went to work, and the Spaniards came and helped them; and. in a few hours, they had bailt them every one a new hut or tent for their lodging apart; for thofe they had already were crouded with their tools, houfhold-ftuffand proyifons: the three houhold-ftuff and proyinons: the three
wicked ones had pitched fartheff off, and the two hone? ones nearer, but both on the north-fhore of the illand, fo that they continued feparate as before: and thus my inand was peopled in three places; and, as I might fay, thyce towns were begun to be planted. And here it is very well worth ob, Serving, that as it often happens in the world, (what the wife ends of God's. Providence are in fuch a difpofition of things I cannot fay) the two honeft fellows had the two worft wives; and the three reprobates, that were fcarce worth hanging, that were fit for nothing, and neither feemed born to do themfelves good, or any one elfe, had shree clever, diligent, careful, and ingenious wives; not that the two first were ill wives as to their temper or hatmour; for all the five were moft willing, quiet, paffive, and fubjegted creatures, rather like flaves than wives; but my meaning is, they were not alike capable, ingenious, or indaftious; or alike cleanly and neat.
Another obfervation I muft make, 30. the honour of a diligent applicasion on the one hand, and to the difgrace of a flothful, negligent, idle temper on the othery that when I came to the place, and vieweed the feveral improvements, planting, and management of the feveral little colonies, the two men had fo far outgone the three,
that there was no comparifon. They had, indeed, both of them as much ground laid out for corn as they wanted; and the reafon was, becaufe, according to my rule, nature dictated, that it was to no purpofe to fow more corn than they wanted; but the difference of the cultivation, of the planting, of the fences, and indeed every thing elfe, was eafy to be feen at firfe yiew.
The two men had innumerable young trees planted about their huts, that when you came to the place, nothing was to be feen but a wood; and though they had their plantation twice demolifhed, once by their own countymen, $_{2}$ and once by the enemy, as fhall be fhewn in it's place, yet they had reftored all again and every thing was flourifhing and thriving about them; they had grapes planted in order, and managed like a vineyard, though they had themfelves never feen any thing of that kind; and by their goed ordering their vines, their grapes sveve as good again as any of the others. They had alfo found themfelves a retreat in the thickeft part of the woods, where, though there was not a natural cave, as I had found, yet they made one with inceffant labour of their hands, and where, when the mifchief which followed happened, they fecured their wives and children, fo as they could never be found; they having, by flicking innumerable ftakes and poles of the wood which, as I. faid, grew fo eafily, made a grove impaffable, except in one place, where they climbed up to get over the outfide part, and then went in by way of their own leaving.
As to the three reprobates, as I juitly call them, though they were much civilized by their new fettlements, compared to what they were before, and were not fo quarrelfome, having not the fame opportanity; yet one of the certain companions of a prolligate mind never left them, and that was their idlenefs. It is true they planted corn, and made fences ; but Solomon's woyds were never better verified than in them = : I went by the vineyard of 6 the Aothful, and it was all over--grown with thorns. For when the Spaniards came to view their crop, they could not fee it in fome places for weeds; the hedge had feveral gaps in
it, where the wild goats had gotten in and eaten up the corn; perhaps here and there a dead bufh was crammed in, to ftop them out for the prefent; but it was only fhutting the fable-door after the fteed was ftolen: whereas, when they looked on the colony of the other two, there was the very or did; induftry and fuccefs upon all they did; there was not a weed to be feenin all their corn, or a gap in any of their hedges; and they, on the other hand, verified Solomon's words in another place: 'That the diligent hand makes plach. For every thing grew and thrived, and they had plenty within and without; they had more tame catthe than the others, more utenfils and neceffaries within doors, and yet more pleafure and diverfion too.
It is true, the wives of the three were very handy and cleanly within doors; and, having learned the Englift ways of dreffing and cooking from one of the other Englifhmen, who, as I faid, was 2 cook's mate on board the fhip, they dreffed their hufband's victuals very nicely and well; whereas the other could not be brought to underftand it; but then the hufband, who, as I faid, had been cook's mate, did it himfelf. But as for the hufbands of the three wives, they loitered about, fetched turties eggs, and caught fifh and birds: in a word, any thing but labour; and they fared accordingly. The diligent lived well and comfortably, and the flothful lived hard and beggarly; and fo.I believe, generally fpeaking, it is all over the world.

But now I come to a feene different from all that had happened before, either to them or to me; and the original of the ftory was this :

Early one morning there came on Thore five or fix canoes of Indians, or favages, call them which you preafe; and there is no soom to doubt, that they came upon the old errand of feeding upon their flaves : but that part was now fo familiar to the Spaniards, and to our men too, that they did not concern themfelves about it as I did; but, having been made fenfible by their experiences, that their only bufinefs was to lie concealed, and that, if they were not feen by any of the favages, they would go off again quietly when their bufinefs was done, having as yet not the leaf notion of there being any in.
habitants in the ifland; I fay, having been made fenfible of this, they had nothing to do but to give notice to all the three plantations to keep within doors, and not to fhew themielves; only placing a fcout in a proper place, only placing a scout in a proper place, to give notice when the boats went off to fea again.
This was without doubt very right; but a difafter fpoiled all thefe meafures, and made it known among the favages, that there were inhabitants there; which was, in the end, the defolation of almoft the whole colony. After the canoes with the favages were gone off, the Spaniards pered abread gone and fome of them had the curiofity to go to the place where they had been, to fee what they had been doing. Here, to their reat furprize, they found three to their great furpiize and favages left behind, and lying fatt alleep upon the ground; it was fuppofed, they had either been fo gorged with their inhuman feaft, that, like bealts, they were afleep, and would not ftir when the others went, or they ftir when the in the woods, and were wandered into the woods, and did not come back in time to be taken in.

The Spaniards were greatly furprized at this fight, and perfeetly at a lofs what to do. The Spanifh goverror, as it happened, was with them, and his advice was afked; but he profeffed he knew not what to do. As for flaves, they had enough already; and as to killing them, they were none of them inclined to that. The Spaniard them inclined to they could not think of fhedding innocent blood; for, as to them, the poor creatures had done no wrong, invaded none of their property, and they thought they had no property, and againft them to take away their quarrel again here I muk, in juftheir lives. And here 1 mut, in juitice to thefe Spaniards, obferve, that let all the accounts of Spanifh cruelty in Mexico and Peru be what they will, I never met with feventeen men, of any nation whatfoever, in any foreign country, who were fo univerfally modef, temwerate, virtuous, fo very good-humourperate, virtuo courteons, as thefe Spaed, and fo courteous, asty, they liad niards; and as to cruety, they sad nothing of it in their very nature; no inhumanity, no harbarity, no outrageous paffions, and yet all of them, men of great courage and fpirit.
of Their temper and calmnefs had appeared, in their bearing the unfuffer-
able ufage of the three Englifhmen; and their juftice and humanity appeared now in the cafe of the favages, as above. After fome confultation, they refolved upon this, that they would lie ftill awhile longer, till, if poffible, thefe three men might be gone; but then the governor Spaniard recollected, that the three favages had no boat, and that, if they were left to rove about the ifland, they would certainly dif cover that there were inhabitants in it; and fo they fhould be undone that way.
Upon this they went back again, and there lay the fellows faft afleep ftill: fo they refolved to awaken them, and take them prifoners; and they did fo. The poor fellows were ftrangely frighted when they were feized upon and bound, and afraid, like the women, that they fhould be murdered and eaten; for, it feems, thofe people think all the world do as they do, eating men's flefh; but they were foon made eafy as to that, and away they carried them.
It was very happy to them, that they did not carry them home to their caftle; I mean, to my palace under the hill; but they carried them firlt to the bower, where was the chief of their country-work; fuch as the keeping the goats, the planting the corn, \&ec. and afterwards they carried them to the habitation of the two Englifhmen.
Here they were fet to work, though it was not much they had for them to do. And, whether it was by negligence in guarding them, or that they thought the fellows could not mend themfelves, I know not, but one of them ran away; and, taking into the woods, they could never hear of him more.

They had good reafon to believe he got home again foon after, in fome other boats or canoes of favages, who came on fhore three or four weeks afterwards, and who, carrying on their revels as ufual, went off again in two days time. This thought terrified them exceedingly; for they concluded, and that not without good caufe indeed, that if this fellow got fafe home among his comrades, he would certainly give them an account that there were people in the inand, as alfa how weak and few they were; for this favage, as I obferved before, had never
been told, as it was very happy fie had not, how many they were, or where they lived; nor had he ever feen or heard the fire of any of their guns; much lefs had they fhewn him any other of their retired places, fuch as the cave in the valley, or the new re= treat which the two Englifhmen had made, and the like.

The firf teftimony they had, that this fellow had given intelligence of them was, that about two months after this, fix canoes of favages, with about feven or eight, or ten men in a canoe, came rowing along the northfide of the ifland, where they never ufed to come before, and landed about an hour after fun-rife, at a convenient place, about a mile from the habitation of the two Englifhmen, where this efcaped man had been kept. As the Spaniard governor faid, had they been all there the damage would not have been fo much, for not a man of them would have efcaped: but the cafe differed now very much; for two men to fifty were too much odds. The two men had the happinefs to difcover them about a league off, fo that it was above an hour before they landed; and, as they landed about a mile from their huts, it was fome time before they could come at them. Now having great reafon to believe that they were betrayed, the firft thing they did was to bind the flaves which were left, and caufe two of the three men whom they brought with the women, who, it feems, proved very faithful to them, to lead them with their two wives, and whatever they could carry away with them, to their retired place in the woods, which I have fpoken of above, and there to bind the two fellows hand and foot till they heard farther.
In the next place, feeing the fas vages were all come on fhore, and that they bent their courfe direetly that way, they opened the fences where their milch-goats were kept, and drove them all out, leaving their goats to ftraggle into the wood, whither they pleafed, that the favages might think they were all bred wild: but the rogue who came with them was too cunning for that, and gave them an account of it all; for they went directly to the place.
When the two poor frighted men had fecured their wives and goods,

They fent the other flave they had of the three who came with the wo men, and who was at their place by accident, away to the Spaniards, with all fpeed, to give them the alarm, and defire fpeedy help; and in the mean time they took their arms, and what ammunition they had, and retreated towards the place in the wood where the wives were fent, keeping at a diftance ; yet fo that they might fee, if poffible, which way the favages took.
They had not gone far, but that, from a rifing ground, they could fee the little army of their enemies come on directly to their habitation, and in a moment more, could fee all their huts and houfhold-ftuff flaming up together, to their great grief and mortification; for they had a very great lofs, and to them irretrievable, at leaft for fome time. They kept their ftation for a while, till they found the favages, like wild beafts, fpread themfelves all over the place, rummaging every way, and every place they could think of, in fearch for prey; and, in particular, for the people, of whom it plainly appeared they had intelligence.
The two Englifhmen feeing this, thinking themfelves not fecure where they ftood, becaufe, as it was likely fome of the wild people might come that way, fo they might come too many together, thought it proper to make another retreat about half a mile farther, believing, as it afterwards happened, that the farther they
the fewer would be together.
The next halt was at the entrance into a very thick grown part of the woods, and where an old trunk of a tree ftood, which was hollow, and vafly large; and in this tree they both took their ftanding, refolving to fee what might offer.

They had not ftood there long, but two of the favages appeared running directly that way, as if they had already notice where they food, and were coming up to attack them; and a little way farther, they efpied three more coming after them, and five more beyond them, all coming the fame way; befides which, they faw feven or eight more at a diftance, running another way; for, in a word, they ran every way, like fportifinen beating for their game.
The poor men were now in great
perplexity, whether they frould ftand, and keep their pofture, or fly: but after a very florr debate with themfelves, they conifidered, that if the favages ranged the country thus, before help came, they might, perhaps, find out their retreat in the woods, and then all would be loft; fo they refolved to fand them there; and if there ed to ftan them ine if were too many to deal with, then they would get to the top of the tree, from whence they doubted not to defend themfelves, (fire excepted) as long as their ammunition lalted, though all the favages that were landed, which the favages sere near fifty, were to attack them. were near fifty, were to attack them.
Having refolved upon this, they
Having refolved upon this, they next conlidered whether they fould fire at the two firft, or wait for the three, and fo take the middle party; by which the two and the five that followed would be feparated. At length they refolved to let the two firft pafs by, unlefs they fhould efpy them in the tree, and come to attack them. The two firlt favages alfo confirmed them in this refolution, by turning a little from them towards another part of the wood; but the three, and the five after them, came forwards directfive after them, came forwards directly to the tree, as if they had known the Englifimen were there.
Seeing them come fo ftraight towards them, they refolved to take them in a line as they came; and as they refolved to fire but one at a time, perhaps the firft fhot might hit them all three; to which purpofe, the man who was to fire, put three or four bullets into his piece; and, having a fair loophole, as it were, from a broken hole in the tree, he took a fure aim, without being feen, waiting till they were within about thirty yards of the tree, fo that he could not mifs.

While they were thus waiting, and the favages came on, they plainly faw that one of the three was the run-away favage that had efcaped from them, and they both knew him diftinctly, and refolved, that, if poffible, he fhould not efcape, though they thould both fire ; fo the other ftood ready with his piece, that if he did not drop at the firt thot, he fhould be fure to have a fecond.

But the firft was too good a markfman to mifs his aim; for, as the favages kept near one another, a little behind in a line, (in a word) he fired,

## ROBINSON CRUSOE.

and hit two of them directly. The foremoft was killed outright, being fhot in the head; the fecond, which was the run-away Indian, was hot through the body, and fell, but was not quite dead; and the third had a little fcratch in the fhoulder, perhaps by the fame ball that went through the body of the fecond; and, being dreadfully frighted, though not much hurt, fat down upon the ground, fcreaming and yelling in a hideous manner.
The five that were behind, more frighted with the noife than fenfible of their danger, ftood ftill at firft ; for the woods made the found a thoufand time bigger than it really was; the echoes rattling from one fide to another, and the fowls' rifing from all parts, fcreaming and making, every fort, a feveral kind of noife, according to their kind, juft as it was when I fired the firft gun that, perhaps, was ever fhot off in that place fince it was an iffand.

However, all being filent again, and they not knowing what the matter was, came on uriconcerned till they cafme to that place where their companions lay, in a condition miferable enough : and here the poor ignorant creatures, not fenfible that they were within reach of the fame mifchief, food all of a huddle over the wounded man, talking, and, as may be fupposed, enquiring of him how he came to be hurt ; and who, it is very rational to believe, told them that a flafl of fire firlt, and immediately after that, thunder from their gods had killed thofe two and wounded him. This, I fay, is rational; for nothing is more certain than that, as they faw no man near them, fo they had never heard a gun in all their lives, or fo much as ever heard of a gun; neither knew they any thing of killing or wounding at a diftance with fire and bullets; if they had, one might reafonably believe that they would not have ftood fo unconcerned, in viewing the fate of their fellows, without fome apprehenfion of their own.
Our two men, though, as they confeffed to me, it grieved them to be obliged to kill fo many poor creatures, who at the fame time had no notion of their danger; yet, having them all thus in their power, and the firf having loaded his piece again, refolved to let fly
both together among them; and fuge ling out by agreement which to aim at, they thot together, and killed or very much wounded four of them; the fifth frighted even to death, though not hurt, fell with the reft; fo that our men feeing them all fall together, thought they had killed them all.

The belief that the favagts wereall killed, made our two men come boldly out from the tree before they had charged their guns again, which was a wrong ftep; and they were under fome furprize when they came to the place and found no lefs than four of the men alive, and of them two very little hurt, and one not at all. This obliged them to fall upon them with the ftocks of their mulquets; and firft they made fure of the run-away favage that had been the caufe of all the mifchief; and of another that was hurt in his knee, and put them out of their pain; then the man that was not hurt at all came and kneeled down to them, with his two hands held up, and made piteous, moan to them, by geftures and figns, for his life; but could not fay one word to them that they could underfand.

However, they figned to him to fit down at the foot of a tree thereby; and one of the Englimmen, with a piece of rope-twine, which he had by great chance in his pocket, tied his feet faft together, and his hands behind him, and there they left him is and, with what fpeed they could, made after the other two which were gone before, fearing they, or any more of them, fhould find the way to their covered place in the woods, where their wives and the few goods they had left lay. They came once in fight of the two men, but it was at a great diftance; however, they had the fatisfaction to fee them crofs over a valley, towards the fea, the quite contrary way from that which led to their retreat, which they were afraid of; and, being fatisfied with that, they went back to the tree where they left their prifoner; who, as they fuppoled, was delivered by his comrades, for he was gone, and the two pieces of rope-yarn, with which they had bound him, lay juft at the foot of the tree.
They were now in as great a concern as before, not knowing what courfe to take, or how near the enemy
might
might be, or in what numbers; fo they refolved to go away to the place where their wives were, to fee if all was well there, and to make them eafy, who were in fright enough to be fure; for though the lavages were their own country-folk, vet they were moft terribly afraid of them, and perthaps the more for the knowledge they had of them.
When they came thither, they found the favages had been in the wood, an very near the place, but had not foun it; for indeed it was inacceffible, by the trees ftanding fo thick, as before, unlers the perfons feeking it had been directed by thofe that knew jt, which thefe were not; they found, therefore, every thing very fafe, only the women in a terrible fright. While they were here, they had the comfort of feven of the Spaniards coming to their affiftance; the other ten, with their fervants, and old Friday, (I mean, Friday's father) were gone in a body to defend their bower, and the corn and cattle that were kept there, in cale the favages fhould have roved over to that fide of the country; but they did not fpread fo far: with the feven Spaniards came one of the favages, who, as I faid, were their prifoners formerly, and with them allo came the favage whom the Englifhmen had left bound hand and foot at the tree; for it feems they came that way, faw the flaughter of the f ven men, and unbound the eight, and brought him along with them; where however, they were obliged to bind him again, as they had done the two othe who were left when the third ran away.

The prifoners began now to be a burden to them; and they were fo afraid of their efcaping, that they thought they were under an abfolute neceffity to kill them for their own prefervation: however, the Spaniard governor would not confent to it, but ordered that they fhould be fent out of the way to my old cave in the valley, and be kept there with two Spaniards to guard them and give them food: which was done; and they were bound there hand and foot for that night.
When the Spaniards came, the two Englifhinen were fo encouraged, that they could not fatisty themfelves to fay any longer there; but taking five of the Spaniards and themielves, with four mulquets and a piftol among
them, and two fout quarter-itaves, away they went in queft of the favages. And firft, they came to the tree where the men lay that had been killed; but it was eafy to fee that fome more of the favages had been there; for they attempted to carry their dead men away, and had dragged two of them a good way, but had given it over. From thence they advanced to the firit rifing ground, where they had food and feen their camp deftroyed, and where they had the mortification ftill to fee fome of the fmoke; but neither could they here fee any of the favages. They then refolved, though with all poffible caution, to go forward towards their ruined plantation: but a little before they came thither, coming in fight of the fea-fhore, they faw plainly the favages all embarking again in their canoes, in order to be gone.

They feemed forry at firt, that there was no way to come at them, to give them a parting blow; but upon the whole, were very well fatisfied to be Fid of them.

The poor Engliflmen being now twice ruined, and all their improve ments deftroyed, the reft all agreed to come and help them to rebuild, and to affift them with needful fupplies. Their three countrymen, who were not yet noted for having the leaft inclination to do any good, yet, as foon as they heard of it, (for they, living remote eaftward, knew nothing of the matter fill all was over) came and offered their help and affiftance, and did very friendly work for feveral days, to reftore their habitations, and make neceffaries for them: and thus in a little time they were fet upon their legs again.
About two days after this, they had the farther fatisfaction of feeing three of the favages canoes come driving on thore, and at fome difance from them, with two drowned men; by which they had reafon to believe, that they had met with a form at fea, which had overfet fome of them; for it had blown very hard the night after they went off.
However, as fome might mifcarry ; fo, on the other hand, enough of them eifaped to inform the vert as well of what they had done, as of what happened to them, and to whet them on to another enterprize of the farne nature, which

Bb
they, it feems, refolved to attempt with fufficient force to carry all before them ; for, except what the firlt man had told them of inhabitants, they could fay little to it of their own knowledge, for they never faw one man, and the fellow being killed that had affirmed it, they had no other witnefs to confirm it to them.

It was five or fix months after this before they heard any more of the favages, in which time our men were in hopes they had not forgot their former bad luck, or had given over the hopes of better, when on a fudden they were invaded with a moft formidable fleet of no lefs than twenty-eight canoes full of favages, armed with bows and arrows, great clubs, wooden fiwords, and fuch like engines of war; and they brought fuch numbers with them, that, in thort, it put all our people into the utmoft confternation.
As they came on fhore in the evening, and at the eaftermolt fide of the ifland, our men had that night to confult and confider what to do ; and, in the firft place, knowing that their being entirely concealed was their only fafety before, and would much more be fo now, while the number of their enemies was fo great, they therefore refolved firlt of all to take down the huts which were built for the two Englifhmen, and drive away their goats to the old cave; becaufe they fuppofed the favages would go directly thither, as foon as it was day, to play the old game over again, though they did not now land within two leagues of it.
In the next place, they drove away all the flock of goats they had at the old bower, as I call it, which belonged to the Spaniards; and, in fhort, left as little appearance of inhabitants any where as pofible; and the next morning early they polted themfelves with all their force at the plantation of the two men, waiting for their coming. As they gueffed, fo it happened; thefe new invaders, leaving their canoes at the eaft-end of the ifland, came ranging along the fhore direetly towards the place, to the number of two hundred and fifty, as near as our men could judge. Our army was but fimall indeed; but that which was worfe, they had not arms for all their number neither. The whole account, it feems, ftood thus. Firft, as to men:

17 Spaniards.
5 Englifhmen.
I Old Friday, or Friday's father.
3 Slaves, taken with the women, who proved very faithful.
3 Other flaves, who lived with the Spaniards.
29
To arm thefe, they had
II Mufquets.
5 Pittols.
3 Fowling-pieces.
5 Mufquets, or fowling-pieces, which were taken by me from the mutinous feamen whom I reduced.
2 Swords.
3 Old halberts.

## 29

To their flaves they did not give either mufquet or fufil; but they had every one an halbert, or a long ftaff, like a quarter-ftaff, with a great fpike of iron faftened into each end of it, and by his fide a hatchet; alfo every one of our men had hatchets. Two of the women could not be prevailed upon, but they would come into the fight; and they had bows and arrows, which the Spaniards had taken from the favages when the firlt action happened, which I have fpoken of, where the Indians fought with one another; and the women had hatchets too.

The Spaniard governor, whom I have defcribed to often, commanded the whole; and William A.tkins, who, though a dreadful fellow for wickednefs, was a moft daring bold fellow, commanded under him. The favages came forward like lions, and our men, which was the wortt of their fate, bad no advantage in their fituation; only that Will Atkins, who now proved a moft ufeful fellow, with fix men, was planted juft behind a fmall thicket of bufhes, as an advanced guard, with orders to let the firft of them pafs by, and then fire into the middle of them; and, as foon as he had fired, to make his retreat, as nimbly as he could, round a part of the wood, and fo come in behind the Spaniards where they flood, having a thicket of trees all before them.
When the favages came on, they
ran ftraggling about every way in heaps, out of all manner of order ; and Will Atkins them pafs by him; then, feeing the theft come in a very thick throng, he reft-come in a h is men to fire, having orders three of his mets with fix or feven loaded their mulquets as big as large bullets apiece, about as billey killed piltol-bullets. Hey knew not; but the or wounded they furprize was inexconfternation and refavages, who were preffible among the degree, to hear fuch frighted to the laife, and fee their men a dreadful noife, and but fee nobody killed, and others hurt, bue middle of that did it; when in the and his their fright, William Atkins, and his other three, let fly again lefs than a thickeft of them; andee, being loaded minute, the firm a third volley.
again, gave them atkins and his men
Had immediately, as foon as they retired fired, as they were ordered to do, or had the reft of the body been at hand, to have poured in their fhot continually, the favages had been effectually routed; for the terror that fectually ront them came principally from this; viz. that they were killed by the gods with thunder and lightning, and could them; but Whin difoovered the cheat. to load again, difcove who were at a Some of the favages, who were at diftance, fpying them, came upon hem behind; and them alfo, two or three men fired a killed above twenty, retimes, and kired they could, yet they wounded Atkins himfelf, and killed wounded Atkins himelr, and killed one of his fellow Englifhmen with their arrows, as they did afterwards one Spaniard, and one women. This flaves who came with gallant fellow, and fought moft defperately, killing five of them with his own hand, having of them with his of the armed ftaves no weapon a hatchet.

Our men being thus hard laid at, Atkins wounded, and two other men killed, retreated to a rifing ground after the wood; and the Spaniards, fring three vollies upon them, retreated alfo; for their number was 10 great, and they were fo defperate, though above fifty of thy wounded, yet and more than io many of our men, they came on in the teeth of our men,
fearlefs of danger, and fhot their arfearles like a cloud; and it was obrows their wounded men, who ferved, that ther difabled, were made were not quite diabir wounds, and outrageous by then.
fought like madmen.
When our men retrearedimman that were killed behind them; and the favages, when they came up to them, killed them over again in a wretched manner, breaking their arms, legs ade heads, with their clubs and wooder fwords, like true favages. But finding our men were gone, they did not feem to purfue them, but drew themfelves up in a kind of a ring, which is, it feems, their cuftom; and flouted it reems, in token of their victory. After twice, in token of the mortification to which, they had the mortife men fall, fee feveral of the mere lofs of blood.
The Spaniard governor having drawn his little body up together upon a rifing ground, Atkins, though he was wounded, would have had him marched, and charged them again all together at once. But the Spaniard replied, • Seignior Atkins, you fee how f their wounded men fight; let thern - alone till morning ; all thefe woundalone will be fiff and fore with ed men wind and with the their wounds, and fa we thall have ' lofs of blood; and
c the fewer to enyage.?
The advice was good; but Will Atkins replied merrily, 'That's true, Atkins rephed fo fhall I too; and - Seignior, and Io I would go on ' that's the reatonn:- Well, Seig' while Atkins,' fays the Spaniard, - nior Atkins, 6 you have behaved gill fight for - done your part, we will on; but I - you, if you cannot come on; but 6 think it is beft to ftay till morning. So they waited.

But as it was a clear moon-light night, and they found the favages in great diforder about their dead and great dif men, and a great hurry and wounded them where they lay, noife afterwards refolved to fall upon they afterwards refoded efially if they could come to give them but one volley before they were difcovered. This they had a fair opportunity to do; for they had the Englifhmen, in whofe quarter it was where the fight began, led them round, between the woods and the fea-fide, weftward, and turnand the fea-fide, weftward, and ing
ing fhort fouth, they came fo near where the thickeft of them lay, that before they were feen or heard, eight of them fired in among them, and did dreadful execution upon them; in half a minute more eight others fired after them, pouring in their fmallfhot in fuch a quantity, that abundance were killed and wounded; and all this while they were not able to fee who hurt them, or which way to fly.
The Spaniards charged again, with the utmoft expedition, and then divided themfelves into three bodies, and refolved to fall in among them all together. They had in each body eight perfons; that is to fay, twenty-four; whereof were twenty-two men, and the two women, who, by the way, fought defperately.
They divided the fire-arms equally in each party, and fo of the halberts and ftaves. They would have had the women keep back; but they faid, they were refolved to die with their huibands. Having thus formed their little army, they marched out from among the trees, and came up to the teeth of the enemy, fhouting and hallooing as loud as they could. The favages ftood all together, but were in the utmoft confufion, hearing the noife of our men fhouting from three quarters together. They would have fought if they had feen us; and, as foon as we came near enough to be feen, fome arrows were flot, and poor old Friday was wounded, though not dangeroully. But our men gave them no time; but, running up to them, fired among them three ways, and then fell in with the but-ends of their mufquets, their fwords, armed faves, and hat chets; and laid about them fo well that, in a word, they fet up a difinal fereaming and howling, flying to fave their lives which way foever they could.
Our men were tired with the execu. tion; and killed or mortally wounded, in the two fights, about one hundred and eighty of them. The reft, being frighted out of their wits, fcoured through the woods, and over the hills, with all the fpeed and fear that nimble feet could help them to do; and as we did not trouble ourfelves much to purfue them, they got all together to the fea-fide, where they land-
ed, and where their canoes lay. But their difalter was not at an end yet for it blew a terrible form of wind that evening from the fea-ward, fa off; it was impofible for them to put off; nay, the form continuing all night, when the tide came up, their canoes were molt of them driven by the furge of the fea fo high upon the fhore, that it required infinite toil to get them off; and fome of them were even dafhed to pieces againft the beach, or againft one another.
Our men, though glad of their victory, yet got little reft that night; but having refremed themfelves as well as they could, they refolved to march to that part of the illand where the favages were fled, and fee what pofture they were in. This neceffarily led them over the place where the fight had been, and where they found feveral of the poor creatures not quite dead, and yet paft recovering life: a fight difagreeable enough to generous minds. for a truly great man, though obliged by the law of battie to deftroy his enemy, takes no delight in his mifery.
any order in this was no need to give any order in this cafe; for their own favages who were their fervants, difpatched thofe poor creatures with their hatchets.
At length they came in view of the place where the more miferable remains of the favages army lay, where there appeared about one hundred ftill; their pofture was generally fitting upon the ground, with their knees upon wards their mouth, and their head put between the hands, leaning down upon nees.
When our men came within two mufquet-fhot of them, the Spaniard governor ordered twa mufquets to be fired without ball, to alarm them. This he did, that by their countenance he might know what to expect; viz. whether they were fill in heart to fight or were fo heartily beaten, as to be difpirited and difcouraged, and fo he might manage accordingly.
This Itratagem took; for, as foon as the favages heard the firlt gun, and faw the flafh of the fecond, they ftarted up upon their feet in the greateft confternation imaginable; and, as our men advanced fiwiftly towards them, they all ran fcreaming and yawling away, with a kind of a howl-
ing noife, which our men did not underttand, and had never heard before; and thus they ran up the bills into the country.
At firft, our men had much rather the weather had been calm, and they had all gone away to fea. But they did not then confider, that this might probably have been the occafion of their coming again in fuch mulieaft, to as not to be rented; often, as would come fo many and fo often, as would quite defolate the inland and itarve
them. Will Atkins, therefore, who, notwithfanding his wound, kept always with them, proved the belt counfellor in this cate. His advice was, to take the advantage that offered, and clap in between them and their boats, and fo deprive them of the capacity of ever returning any more to plague the ifland.

They confulted long about this, and fome were againft it, for fear of making the wretches fry and live there defperate; and fo they fhould have them to hunt like wild beafts, be afraid to ftir about their bufinefs, and have their plantation continually rifled, all their tame goats deftroyed, and, in fhort, be reduced to a life of continual diftrefs.

Will Atkins told them, they had better have to do with one hundred men, than with one hundred nations; that as they muff deftroy their boats, fo they muft deftroy the men, or be all of them deftroyed themfelves. In a word, he fhewed them the neceffity of it fo plainly, that they all came into it; fo they went to work immediately with the boats, and, getting forne dry wood together from a dead tree, they tried to fet fome of them on fire ; but they were fo wet, that they would farce burn. However, the fire fo burned the upper part, that it foon made them unfit for fwimming in the fea as boats. When the Indians faw what they were about, fome of them came running out of the woods; and, coming as near as they could to our men, kneeled down and cried, 'Oa, - oa, war amokoa,' and fome other word's of ther language, which none of the others underitood any thing of; but as they made pitiful geltures, and flange noifes, it was eafy to underftand, they begged to have their boats fpared, and
that they would be gone, and never come thither again.

But our men were nov fatisfied, that they had no way to preferve themfelves, or to fave their colony, but effectually to prevent any of thele people from ever going home again; depending upon this, that if ever fo much as one of them got back into their country to tell the itory, the colony was untione. So that, letting them know that they fhould not have any mercy, they fell to work with their canoes, and deftroyed them every one canoes, the form had not deftroyed before; at the fight of which the favares fore; at the fight of which the favages raifed a hideous cry in the woods, which our people heard plain enough; after which they ran about the inland like diftracted men; fo that, in a word our men did not really know at firft what to do with them.
Nor did the Spaniards, with all their prudence, confider, that while they made thofe people thus defperate, they ought to have kept good guard at the fame time upon their plantations; for though it is true they had driven away though it is true they had driven away their cattle, and the Ing:ans did not find their main retreat; (i mean, ny old caftle at the hill, nor the cave in the valley;) yet they found out my plantation at the bower, and pulled it all tation at and all the fences and plantto pieces, and all the fences and planting about it; trod all the corn under foot ; tore up the vines and grapes, being juift then almoft ripe; and did our men an inettumable damage, through to themfelves not one farthing's worth of fervice.

Though our men were able to fight them upon all occalions, yet they were in no condition to purfue them, or hunt them up and down; for as they were too nimble of foot for our men when they found them fingle, fo our men durft not go about ingle, for men durit not go furounded with their fear of being furrounde, they had no numbers. The bett was, they had bows, weapons; for though they or any mathey had no arrows left, nor any ma terials to make any, nor hat they any edged tool or weapon among them.
The extremity and diftrefs they were reduced to was great, and indeed deplorable; but, at the fame time, our men were alfo brought to very hard circumitances by them; for though their retreats were preferved, yet their
proviiion was deftroyed, and their harveft foiled; and what to do, or which way to turn themfelves, they knew not. The only refuge they had now, was the fock of cattle they had in the valley by the cave, and fome little corn which grew there. The three Englifhmen, William Atkins, and his comrades, were now reduced to two, one of them being killed by an arrow, which ftruck him on the fide of his head, juft under the temples, fo that he never fpoke more; and it was very remarkable, that this was the fame barbarous fellow who cut the poor favage flave with his hatchet, and who afterwards intended to have murdered the Spaniards.
I looked upon their cafe to have been worfe at this time, than mine was at any time after I firft difcovered the grains of barley and rice, and got into the method of planting and raifing my corn, and my tame cattle ; for now they had, as I may fay, a hundred wolves upon the illand, which would devour every thing they could comeat, yet could be very hardly come at them-
felves.

The firft thitg they concluded, when they faw what their circumfances were, was, that they would, if poffible, drive them up to the farther part of the ifland, fouth-eaff, that if any more find ane came on fhore, they might not find one another ; then, that they would daily hunt and harafs them, and kill as many of them as they could number'; and if had reduced their them, and bring they could at laft tame they, and bring them to any thing, they would give thein corn, and teach them how to plant, and live upon their daily labour.
In order to this, they followed them, and 10 terrified them with their guns, that in a few days, if any of them fixed a gun at an Indian, if he did not hit him, yet he would fall down for fear; and to dreadfully frighted they were, that they kept out of fight farther and farther; till at laft our men following them, and every day almoft killing and wounding fome of them, they kept up in the woods and hollow places fo much, that it reduced them to the utmolt milery for want of food; and
many were afterwards found dead in many were afterwards found dead in
the woods, without any hurt, but merely farved to death.

When our men found this, it mado their hearts relent, and pity moved them; efpecially the Spaniard governor, who was the moft gentlemanlike, generous-minded man, that I ever met with in my life : and he propofed, if poffible, to take one of them alive, and bring him to underftand what they meant, fo far as to be able to act as interpreter, and to go among them, and fee if they might be brought to fome conditions, that might be depended upon to fave their lives, and to do us no fpoil.
It was fome time before any of them could be taken; but, being weak and half tarved, one of them was at laft furprized, and made a prifoner; he was fullen at firft, and would neither eat nor drink; but finding himfelf kind$1 y$ ufed, and victuals given him, and no violence offered him, he at laft grew tractable, and came to himfelf.
They brought old Friday to him, who talked often with him, and told him how kind the others would be to them all; that they would not only fave their lives, but would give them a part of the ifland to live in, provided they would give fatisfaction, that they fhould keep in their own bounds, and not come beyond them, to injure or prejudice others; and that they mould have corn given them, to plant and make it grow for their bread, and fome bread given them for their prefent fubfiftence : and old Friday bade the fellow go and talk with the reft of his countrymen, and fee what they faid to it; affuring them, that if they all be delfroyed all be delfroyed.
The poor wretches, thoroughly humbled, and reduced in number to about thirty-feven, clofed with the propofal at the firft offer, and begged to have tome food given them; upon which twelve Spaniards and two Englifhmen, well armed, and three Indian
faves and old Fider flaves and old Friday, marched to the place where they were. The three Indian flaves carried them a large quantity of bread, and fome rice boiled up to cakes, and dried in the fun, and three live goats; and they were ordered to go to the fide of a hill, where. they fat down, eat the provifions very thankfully, and were the moft faithful fellows to their words that could be thought of; for, except when they
came to beg victuals and directions, they never came out of their bounds; and there they lived when I came to the ifland, and I went to fee them.

They had taught them both to plant corn, make bread, breed tame goats, and milk them. They wanted nothing but wives, and they foon would have been a nation. They were confined to a neck of land, furrounded with high rocks behind them, and lying plain towards the fea before them, on the fouth-eaft corner of the ifland. They had land enough, and it was very good and fruitful; for they had a piece of land about a mile and half broad, and three or four miles in length.

Our men taught them to make wooden fpades, fuch as I made for myfelf; and gave among them twelve hatchets, and three or four knives; and there they lived, the moft fubjected innocent creatures that ever were heard of.
After this, the colony enjoyed a perfeet tranquillity, with refpect to the favages, till I came to re-vifit them, which was in about two years. Not but that now and then fome canoes of Gvages came on-fhore for their triumphal unnatural feafts; but as they were of feveral nations, and, perhaps, had never heard of thofe that came before, or the reafon of it, they did not make any fearch or enquiry after their countrymen; and if they had, it would have been very hard for them to have found them out.
Thus, I think, I have given a full account of all that happened to them, to my return; at leaft, that was worth notice. The Indians, or favages, were wonderfully civilized by them, and they frequently went among them; but forbid, on pain of death, any of the Indians coming to them, becaufe they would not have their fettlements betrayed again.

One thing was very remarkable; viz. that they taught the favages to make wicker-work, or bafkets; but they foon out-did their mafters, for they made abundance of moft ingenious things in wicker-work; particularly, all forts of bafkets, fieves, bird-cages, cupboards, \&ec. as alfo chairs to fit on, ftools, beds, couches, and abundance of other things, being very ingenious at fuch work, when they were once put in the way of it.
My coming was a particular relief
to thefe people, becaufe we furnifhed them with knives, fciffars, fpades, flovel's, pick-axes, and all things of that kind which they could want.

With the help of thefe tools they were fo very handy, that they came at laft to build up their hats, or houfes, very handfomely; radling, or working it up like bafket-work all the way round, which was a very extraordinary piece of ingenuity, and loked very odd; but was an exceeding good fence, as wel! againft heat, as againft all forts of vermin; and our men were fo taken with it, that they got the wild favages to come and to the like for them; fo that when I came to fee the two Englifhmen's colonies, they looked, at a diftance, as if they lived all like bees in a hive; and as for Will Atkins, who was now become a very induftrious, neceffary, and fober fellow, he had made himfelf fuch a tent of bafket-work, as I believe was never feen; it was one hundred and twenty paces round on the outfide, as I meafured by my fteps; the walls were as clofe worked as a bafket, in pannels, or fquares, thirty-two in number, and very ftrong, ftanding about feven feet high: in the middle was another not above twenty-two paces round, but built ftronger, being eight-fquare in it's form, and in the eight corners frood eight very ftrong pofts, round the top of which he laid frong pieces, joined to joined together a pyranid before the which he raifed a pyranid before the roof of eight rafters, very handfome, I affure you, and joined together very well, though he had no nails, and only a few iron fpikes, which he had made himfelf too, out of the old iron hat I left there; and, indeed this that I left there; and, indeed, this fellow thewed abundance of ingenuity in feveral things which he had no knowledge of: he made himfelf a forge, with a pair of wooden bellows to blow the fire the inade himfelf charcoal for his work, and he formed out of one of the iron crows a middlin good of the iron crows a middring good anvil to hammer upon; in this manner he made many things, but efpecially hooks, itaples and lipikes, bolts and hinyes. But to return to the house; after he had pitched the roof of his innermoft tent, he worked it up between the rafters with baiketwork, fo firm, and thatched that over again fo ingeniourly with cice-ftraw;
and over that a large leaf of a tree, which covered the top, that his houle was as dry as if it had been tiled or flated. Indeed, he owned that the favages made the bafket-work for him.
The outer circuit was covered, as a tean-to, all round this inner apartment, and long rafters lay from the hirty-two angles to the top pofts of the inner-houfe, being about twenty feet diftant; fo that there was a fpace ike a walk, within the outer wickerwall, and without the inner, near twenty feet wide.
The inner place he partitioned off with the fame wicker-work, but much fairer, and divided it into fix apartments, fo that he had fix rooms on a floor, and out of every one of thefe there was a door; firtt, into the entry or coming into the main tent, and another door into the fpace or walk that was round it, fo that this walk was alfo divided into fix equal parts, which ferved not only for a retreat, but to fore up any neceffaries which the family had occafion for. Thefe fix fpaces not taking up the whole circumference, what other apartments the outer circle wad, were thus ordered: As Ioon as you were in at the door of the as you were in ate circle, you had a fhort paffage ftraight before you to the door of the inner-houfe; but on either fide was a wicker partition, and a door in it, by which you went, firft, into a large room or ftore-houfe, twenty feet wide, and about thirty feet long, and through that into another not quite fo long. So that in the outer circle were ten handfome rooms, fix of which were only to be come at through the apartments of the inner tent, and ferved as clofets or retired roams to the relpective chambers of the inner circle; and four large warehoufes or barns, or what you pleafe to call them, which went in through one another, two on either hand of the paffage, that led through the outer door to the inner tent.

Such a piece of balket-work, I believe, was never feen in the world; nor an houle or tent fo neatly contrived, much lefs fo built. In this great bee-hive lived the three families; that is to lay, Will Atkins, and his companion; the third was killed, but his wife remained with three children; for the was, it feems, big with child when he died; and the ocher two were not at all back.
ward to give the widow her full thare of every thing; I mean, as to their corn, milk, grapes, \&c. and when they killed a kid, or found a turtle on the fhore; fo that they all lived well enough, though, it was true, they were not fo induftrious as the other two, as has been obferved already.

One thing, however, cannot be omitted; viz. that as for religion, I don't know that there was any thing of that kind among them; they pretty often, indeed, put one another in mind, that there was a God, by the very common method of feamen, viz. fivearing by his name. Nor were their poor ignorant favage wives much the better for having been married to Chriftians, as we muft call them; for as they knew very little of God themfelves, fo they were utterly incapable of entering into any difcourfe with their wives about a God, or to talk any thing to them concerning religion.

The utmoft of all the improvement which I can fay the wives had madefrom them, was, that they had taught them to fpeak Englifh pretty well; and all the children they had, which were near twenty in all, were taught to fpeak Englinh too, from their firft learning to fpeak, though they at firt fpoke it in a very broken manner like their mothers. There were none of thofe children above fix year in I came thither, for it was not much above feven years that they had fetched thefe five favage ladies over, but they had all been pretty fruitful, for they had all children, more or lefs, I think the cook's mate's wife was big of her fixth child; and the mothers were all a good fort of well-governed, quiet, laborious women, modelt and decent, helpful to one another, mighty obfervant and fubject to their marters, (I cannot call them hufbands) and wanted nothing but to be well initructed in the Chriftian religion, and to be legally married; both which were happily brought about afterwards by my means, or, at leaft, by the confequence of my coming among them.

Having thus given an account of the colony in general, and pretty muich of my five runagate Englithmen, I muf fay fomething of the Spaniards, who were the main body of the family; and in whofe ftory there are fome incidents alfo remarkable enough.
I had a great many difcourfes with thems
them about their circumftances, when they were among the favages. They told me readily, that they had no infances to give of their application or ingenuity in that country; that they were a poor miferable dejected handful of people; that if means had been put into their hands, they had yet fo abandoned themfelves to defpair, and fo funk under the weight of their misfortunes, that they thought of nothing but farving, One of them, a grave and very fenfible man, told me, he was convinced they were in the wrong; that it was not the part of wife men to give up themfelves to their mifery, but always to take hold of the helps which reafon offered, as well for prefent fupport, as for future deliverance. He told me, that grief was the molt fenfelefs, infignificant paffion in the world; for that it regarded only things paft, which were gencrally impoffible to be recalled or to be remedied, but had no view to things to come, and had no fhare in any thing that looked like deliverance, but rather added to the affliction than propofed a remedy. And upon this, he repeated a Spanifh proverb; which, though I cannot repeat in juft the fame words that he fpoke it, yet I remember I made it into an Englifh proverb of my own thus:

In trouble to be troubleds
Is to have your trouble doubled.
He ran on then in remarks upon all the little improvements I had made in my folitude; my unwearied application, as he called it; and how I had made a condition, which, in it's circumftances, was at firft much worfe than theirs, a thoufand times more happy than theirs was, even now; when they were all together: He told me, it was remarkable, that Englifhmen had a greater prefence of mind in their diftrefs than any people that ever he met with; thiat ther unhappy nation, and the Portugueze; were the worft men in the world to ftruggle with misfortunes; for that their-firft ftep in dangers, after common efforts are over, was always to defpair, lie down under it and die, without rouzing their thoughts up to proper remedies for efcape.
I told himy their cafe and mine dif-
fered exceedingly; that they were caft upon the fhore without neceffaries, without fupply of food, or of prefent fuftenance, till they could provide it : that it is true, I had this difadvantage and difcomfort, that I was alone; but then the füpplies I had providentially thrown into my hands; by the unexpected driving of the fhip on fliore, was fuch a help as would have encouraged any creature in the world to have applied himfelf as I had done. ' Seignior,' fays the Spaniard, 'had - we poor Spaniards been in your cale, - we fiould never have gotten half - thofe things out of the flip as yoti ' did. Nay, fays he, ' we fhould never have found means to have 6 gotten a raft to carry them, or to ? have gotten a raft on fhore without - boat or fail; and how much lefs ' fhould we have done;' faid he, ' if ' any of us had been alorie! Well; I defired him to abate his compliment, and go on with the hiftory of their coming on fhore, where they landed. He told me, they unhappily landed at a place where there were people without provifions; whereas; had they had the common fenfe to have put off to fea again, and gone to another ifland a little farther, they had found provifions, though without people; there being an ifland that way, as they had been told, where there were provifions; though no people; that is to fay, that the Spaniards of Trinidad had frequently been there, and filled the ifland with goats and hogs at feveral times; where they have bred in fuch multitudes, and where turtle and fea-fowls were in fuch plenty; that they could have been in no want of flefh, though they had found no bread; whereas here they were only fuftained with a few roots and herbs; which they underftood not; and which had no fubtance in them, and which the inhabitants gave them faringly enough, and who could treat them no better, unlef's hey would turn canibals, and eat men's flefh; which was the great dainty of their country.

They gave nie an account how many ways they ftrove to civilize the favages they were with, and to teach them rational cuftoms in the ordinamy way of living, but in vain; and how they retorted it upon them as unjuft, that they; who came thither for affilt-

